This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

4 Bd 710

256 f 1384

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for T. CADELL, Bookſeller in the Strand.
MDCCXCIV.

Digitized by Google

BODLEIAN
17 6 1904
LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

VOL. II.

BOOK the FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of *Chryſal's* new maſter. *Chryſal* attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception. Page 13

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Arch-biſhop, is diverted by another dream. 18

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment and almoſt converſion of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſuade each other to dream that it is true. 25

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world, promotes a noble inſtance of charity. *Chryſal* enters into the ſervice of her Grace. 32

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants in *Germany*. He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the Archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character. 37

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

The true use of court-favour. The biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built, instead of an hen-coop; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common: A beau Lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress. 41

CHAP. VII.

An old visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Annandale. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character. 49

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old Soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad. 56

CHAP. IX.

Chrysal changes his service, for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate clyster-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for *drying* his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings *Chrysal* into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win. 61

CHAP. X.

Chrysal's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-singer. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike. 69

CHAP. XI.

A venerable matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. *Momus* plays successively upon Doctor *Hunch Back*, and mother *Brimstone*. After various dialects, the evening is concluded in character. 73

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an unusual friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. *Chrysal* enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment, in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character. 86

CHAP. XIII.

History of a Lady of fashion. Description of a rout. *Chrysal* changes his service for that of a Lady of enterprize. A bold stroke for a husband. 92

CHAP. XIV.

Chrysal, by a natural progression, comes into the possession of a knight of industry, who brings him to an horse race, where he has an opportunity of seeing a noble jockey practise part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences. 100

CHAP. XV.

Chrysal's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, *Chrysal* comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs. 105

CHAP. XVI.

Chrysal's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. *Chrysal* enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son. 110

CHAP. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old fashioned romantic style. *Chrysal* quits the service of the general

Digitized by Google

general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace. 116

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the *Hague*. Political conversation between a *Dutchman* and a *Jew*. They differ in opinion. Aminadab leaves his friend *Van Hogan* in great distress. 122

CHAP. XIX.

Aminadab bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for *Africa*. *Chrysal* remains with a *Dutch* banker. The principles and conscience of a good *Dutchman*. *Chrysal* is sent into *Germany*. His opinion of the *Dutch*. 131

CHAP. XX.

Chrysal's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions. 136

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. *Chrysal* is carried to his destined master. 143

CHAP. XXII.

How *Chrysal* found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation, and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolution to maintain the consequence of his rank. 149

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. *Chrysal* is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon. 155

CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the *Passover* in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained. 158

BOOK

Digitized by Google

BOOK the SECOND.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice. 162

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented, brings *Chrysal* into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the bumbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the sight of *Chrysal*. 167

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in, and after the battle. 172

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. *Chrysal* finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger. 176

CHAP. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul. 182

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity

Digitized by Google

necessity to the strangers. *Chrysal* changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the king of *Bulgaria*, and the probable consequences of the war. 186

CHAP. VII.

Chrysal arrives in *Vienna*, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in *England*. He is sent to *Peru*. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to *Europe* to prepare matters better. 193

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which *Spain* and *Portugal*, are to be brought into the war with *England*. He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular design. 197

CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in *Germany*, and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states. 201

CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. *Chrysal* changes his service. 205

CHAP. XI.

Chrysal proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of *Germany*. A short view of the war between the *French* and *English*, with the motives of the former, for transferring the seat of it into *Germany*. Infidious ambition meets a just disappointment. 209

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery

Digitized by Google

Treachery falls into the pit, it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy *English* soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin. 218

CHAP. XIII.

Chrysal arrives in *Brussels*. The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. The history concluded in character. 224

CHAP. XIV.

The confessor entertains *Chrysal's* master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place. 229

CHAP. XV.

Continued: His lordship's scheme to fling his rival, unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions strange discoveries. Women never at a loss. Love often spoils sport. 235

CHAP. XVI.

Chrysal's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a great man. 241

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to *England*, where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand. 248

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and suffers a second shipwreck in *England*. He that will not when he may, &c.——It is often better to play a poor game, than stand out. *Chrysal* arrives at *Lisbon*. 256

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIX.

Chryſal comes at *Liſbon* into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. *Chryſal's* maſter is at length taken up; and he changes his ſervice. 259

CHAP. XX.

Chryſal meets another acquaintance at his new maſters. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt *Aminadab*. Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at *Liſbon*, in which *Chryſal* ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded. *Chryſal* enters into a new ſervice. 265

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of *Pheron* and *Iſiſa*. 271

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquiſitor viſits *Pheron*, and obtains his conſent. He employs an *Engliſh* ſailor, whom he ſets at liberty, to aſſiſt him in his deſigns. 279

CHAP. XXIII.

The ſailor goes to *London*, buys a ſhip and returns to *Liſbon*, where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a *French* ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at *Alexandria*, returns home and marries. *Chryſal* quits his ſervice. 284

CHAP. XXIV.

Chryſal arrives in *London*, where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion. 292

Digitized by Google

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'S *new master.* CHRYSAL *attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception*

I HAVE often been apprehensive, that the manner in which I express myself may lead you into some mistakes of my meaning; the signification of words in the language of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible to convey a determinate sense, without such a periphrasis, as would take up too much time in so complicated scenes as these I describe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are signified

Digitized by Google

by the same word. how easy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take a wrong one?

For instance, the character of a good man may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension, from the immutability of the virtues which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by or to human frailty, and yet how variously, how contradictorily is it applied.

On the Royal Exchange, he is a good man who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, goodness assumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, tho' he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws, human and divine: while in the strictness of truth, and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived, than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern modish way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance! they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse that wins the match, goes damn'd fast; as the one that loses goes damn'd slow. The weather in summer is hell fire hot, in winter hell fire cold.

Now what sense can the very Devil himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions. Tho' indeed these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they shew the inclination which men have to

Digitized by Google

his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common converſation.

But I am not at leiſure to preſcribe rules for avoiding this confuſion, one of the moſt extenſive cauſes of human error. I ſhall only give you ſome cautions to prevent your falling into it, in reſpect of what I ſay to you.

You are to obſerve then, that whenever I ſpeak in the perſon of another, I always would be underſtood in the ſenſe which that perſon would be underſtood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral or phyſical truth, or propriety of ſpeech. But when I ſpeak my own ſentiments, (which indeed, I very rarely do) I ſhall always deliver them with perſpecuity and preciſion, as far as the jargon I am obliged to uſe will allow; and would have my words taken in the ſenſe, uſually given to them, in the particular ſubject I may be then ſpeaking of; as the barrenneſs of language has not been able to afford diſtinct terms to them all, but is forced to wreſt known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injuſtice of the general complaint againſt the verboſity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) diſtinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverſe.

My new maſter was a perſon of ſome learning, and what was of more uſe, of thorough knowledge of the world; but wanting friends and intereſt, to advance him to thoſe dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had ſolicited this place, in diſcharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry conſideration of a poor ſalary, (for as he was not in the ſecret, he had no ſhare of the ſpoils) tho' his circumſtances and knowledge of

Digitized by Google

the value of money could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a more conspicuous light, where they might take the notice of his superiors.

As soon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife dressed in all her best cloaths, and expecting him with the utmost impatience. 'My dear (said she) how could you stay abroad so late? I have been waiting for you above these two hours, and was just going without seeing you.' 'So late my dear! it is scarcely six o'clock! But where are you going in such haste?——' 'To the Bishop's; the Rector of ..... died of an apoplectic fit, as he was taking his nap after dinner this evening, and you know my intimacy with the Bishop's lady entitles me to ask any thing from her.'—'But, child, this is not in her power to give, and even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance to expect! This diffidence has been your ruin! You are always afraid of asking, as if there was ruin in being refused; but this is not my case! Ask and you shall have, is my text! Now-a-days nothing is got without it.'—Yes, child, but too frequent or improper asking brings contempt.'—'The manner, the manner of asking is the thing! And you cannot think I want to be taught that now, after having lived so long among the Great? Often have I known a request, properly made, gain a man a place, for which he has never dreamed of! As to the greatness of this living, never mind that! the greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to the person who gets it for you! What money have you got about you? we shall make a party perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound note; I may have occasion for that too, to make a bett.'

'There,

Digitized by Google

'There, my dear, is the money I received to day; I'll step up for the note: but pray, my dearest, take care what you do! It is our all! And be sure you are not tempted to any thing like simony. It is a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever rising, if it is detected.'——'And the fool that is detected, deserves never to rise! You may call a thing by what nonsensical name you please; but if knowledge of the world were to prevent people's rising in it, I do not know who would be uppermost now-a-days! Bring me the note, and leave the rest to me. You shall know nothing of what I intend till it's done, and then the fault, if any, will be all mine. Here Jane, settle the furbelows of my scarf, and John, call a chair to the door directly.' 'Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you; I do not desire to know what you intend: But remember, my dear, this note is our all!' 'Never fear! The chair is come, and I must lose no time. You will divert yourself with your children, or books, I suppose; or go to the coffee-house. Perhaps I may not return till 'tis late.'——'I wish you success, my dear, and pray be cautious.

With these words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wife mentioned I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who carried me away with her to the Bishop's.

When she came there, the footman answered that it was not his lady's night, and she was not at home; but my mistress had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning; but putting half a crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instant-

Digitized by Google

ly flew open, his lady was at home, and my miſtreſs ſhewn up without any further difficulty.

The Biſhop's lady was ſitting at a ſnug party, with three or four ſelect friends, and ſeemed not much pleaſed at the intruſion of my miſtreſs, to whom ſhe ſcarce deign'd a nod; but turning to the footman, 'I thought, ſirrah, (ſaid ſhe) that I was not to be at home this evening! I ſuppoſe I ſhall have all the mob of the town let in upon me.'—'Dear madam, (replied my miſtreſs) the man is not to blame! He told me you were not at home; but having ſome very earneſt buſineſs, I made bold to break through your orders, but I hope for your pardon, when you know the cauſe of my intruſion.'—'O madam! (replied the Lady) you know I am always glad of your company, I only chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray, be ſeated, madam; as ſoon as the rubber is up, I ſhall wait upon you.'—'Dear madam, (added my miſtreſs) you need not give yourſelf that trouble; now I am with you, my buſineſs can wait your leiſure.'

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finiſhed, my miſtreſs was aſked to cut in, one of the party being taken ſuddenly ill, which ſhe did, and ſat out the whole evening; her ſucceſs at cards keeping up her ſpirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair ſhe came about;

Digitized by Google but

but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber; and what was still worse, several by-betts, which she made to bring herself home.

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company were gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out.—'And now, pray madam, may I ask what was the great business that brought you here this evening, said she? Unlucky business it has been for me, I know; for I have never held a card since you came: but I shall take care that that rascal, who let you in, shall never serve me so again! He shall strip and turn off, without his breakfast, the moment I am up in the morning.'—'Dear madam, (replied my mistress, unabash'd at such a salute) have patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends for all! Will you please to sit down to one sober party of picquet? You are always too hard for me, yet I'll venture all my winnings; and perhaps what I have to say, in the mean time, may compensate for my intrusion.'

The Lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o'clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a repique or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, Dear madam, that is right! Have you heard of the sad accident that happened this evening?'—'Not I, (replied the other) pray what is it?'—'Why poor Doctor —— was taken ill shortly after dinner, and died in his chair!—Aye then, I suppose, he had plumb-porridge, and over-eat himself! and so burst a pudding, as we say to children. Ha, ha,

Digitized by Google

ha, ha!—Ha, ha, ha!—But pray, madam, have you any faith in dreams? What do you think? I dream'd last night that I saw you at court, on some great occasion, with just such a diamond necklace on as the Countess's, which you had bought with five hundred pounds that you won from me on a bett; you laying, that my husband would, and I that he would not, get the Doctor's living. Well, to be sure, there must be something more than ordinary in it; for, can you believe it? this very morning, I put a bank-note for five hundred pounds in my pocket, here it is; though I did not think of the poor man's death, till I heard it as I came by this evening, when my dream ran so strongly in my head that I could not forbear breaking in upon you, a rudeness I should never have been guilty of on any other occasion.'—'Dear madam, you need make no apology to me: You know your company is always welcome. I am always at home to you!'—'But, madam, what do you think of my dream?'—'I do not know, I only wish it were to prove true! For five hundred pounds could never come more seasonably.'—'Then you must win it; for my heart is set upon making the bett; and I assure you, I have such a regard for you, that I do not even wish you to lose; and that is what few gamesters can say!'—'You are a pleasant creature! but as for the BETT, it shall be upon condition, that my Lord is not under any engagement to the Minister, or her Grace who got him his Bishoprick. If he is disengaged, I will lay you; and you shall lose my girl, if it was ten times as much, and there's encouragement for you to hold. The bell rings! Will you walk down and take a bit of supper? There is nobody but my Lord and I; but do not take

Digitized by Google

ther

the leaſt notice of any thing about the matter, nor even ſeem to have heard of the Doctor's death, ſhould my Lord mention it! but muſter up all your ſpirits, and be as entertaining as you can, for I always work him up beſt, when he goes to bed in a good humour.'

The picquet-match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the Biſhop's Lady, whoſe winnings and expectations ſent her to her ſupper in high ſpirits, where ſhe found his Lordſhip already ſeated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the uſual complimentary expletives, that uſher in every polite converſation; 'Pray, my Lord, (ſays my new miſtreſs to her huſband) what will you eat? Shall I help you to a bit of this fricaſee? I believe it is very good.'—'No, my dear, I thank you, (replied his Lordſhip) I have not the leaſt appetite! What is it, pray?'—'Sweet breads and cocks combs, (returned his lady) you uſed to like them, and they are very nice! or will you help yourſelf to a bit of that fowl before you? ſomething you muſt eat.'—'No, my dear, I am obliged to your care; but I do not chuſe any thing to-night; I am very well: We all eat too much! Repletion kills half the people of England. We eat too much!'—'You are going to be hip'd, my dear! John, give your maſter a glaſs of Madeira. Fill the glaſs! Eating never hurt any one who waſhed down his victuals with a glaſs of good wine; horſe meals, indeed, are enough to choak human creatures! So! do not you find yourſelf better now? Taſte this fricaſee; you cannot think how good it is!'—Well you will have your way. You make me do as you pleaſe, things never ſo contrary to my inclination. Do you call this a fricaſee? I thought fricaſees had ſpice put in them?

This

Digitized by Google

This is as insipid as chop'd hay! Lord deliver us from such cooks! the badness of servants, in general, seems to be a judgment on the vices of the age!—'Well, my dear, taste that fowl, it looks like a good one, and the cook could not spoil that. Pray, madam, shall I trouble you to help his Lordship to a leg and a wing, and a bit of the breast.' You give me too much! I shall never be able to eat all this! besides you know, my dear, I chuse a bit of the rump.'—'Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall have the rump; but what has happened to make you so low-spirited this evening?'—'O child, who can be other than low-spirited, when such instances of mortality happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell but the misfortune may be his own next moment? There's Doctor ——, poor man was taken off this evening, without a minute's warning, to prepare for such a tremendous change, just after he had made an hearty dinner: here John take away my plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever sleep after dinner again!'—'And, John, give your master another bumper of Madeira; that was what the Doctor wanted; he eat a great deal, and did not allow himself any drink. Drink good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt you.'—'Ah! but that was not the case of his Grace of—— who lies in the agonies of death! his physicians left him two hours ago! The Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of his coming! He did not stint himself of wine; he took his bottle chearfully, good man'—Chearfully, did you say? You should have said sottishly; for he has done nothing but drink for these many years past! He has run into the opposite extreme from the Doctor, drinking too much, and not eating enough to support nature. And I hope

Digitized by Google

I hope you do not say he has gone without warning, at fourscore; he has had time enough to prepare: but why should these examples affect you particularly? You do not eat like the Doctor, nor drink like his Grace, and are young enough to be son to the youngest of them; why then should you fear their fate? Here, John, give me a pint glass half full of Madeira, and reach me three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, if you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a bit of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with you.

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper, without being able to join in the conversation; but as soon as his Lordship's taking the jellies made a pause in his Lady's tenderness, she called for a glass of wine, and bowing to the bishop drank to him by the title of his Grace very gravely.

His Lordship stared, and his Lady started, while she finished her glass without any emotion, and seemed quite unconscious of having said any thing unusual or improper. This behaviour still embarrassed them more; when the Lady, unable to contain her surprise, 'Dear madam, (said she) what have you said? Or how came you to address my lord by that title?' 'I hope, madam, (replied the other) I have not said any thing improper! You really frighten me! I hope I have not been failing in my respect, or addressed his lordship by any improper title!'—I cannot say an improper one indeed! but one that does not belong to him, at least as yet,' (returned the Lady.)—'Dear madam, what do you mean? Pray do not distress me! but you must divert yourself surely! It is not possible that I could fail in my respect to his Grace!'—'Ha, ha, ha! There it is again! Fail in your respect! No. You only

Digitized by Google

only raised your respect too high! You called him his Grace, that's all.'—'And is that all? Thank heaven that I did! and long live his Grace, I say again, (said she dropping on her knees, and eagerly kissing his hand) long live your Grace! There is, there must be truth in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the Bishop, who had hitherto continued to sup up his jelly, without seeming to take any notice what they were saying, could not forbear shewing some emotion; for he had the strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely defended their credit, especially since his present elevation had confirmed those of his grand-mother: 'What dreams? pray, good madam,' said he, (addressing my late mistress with a visible anxiety) 'What dreams do you mean? Those which were thought to have respect to me are understood to be already accomplished.' 'Please your Grace, (the impulse of the spirit is upon me, and I cannot call you by any other title!) Please your Grace, I say, I dream'd last night, as I told your Lady but just now, that I met her at court, on some very great occasion, as fine as hands could make her; (I told her this just now, before I knew one syllable of his Grace's death) and that she came up to me smiling, and thanked me for the cause of her coming there, for it was I who had made you a great man! —Now, what could this possibly mean, but what has happened here this moment, when by giving you this title first, (and Lord knows, I did it without the least design, or even being sensible of it when I did it) I may in some manner be said to have made you the great man it belong'd to: let the world say what they

Digitized by Google

company, who all laughed in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her Grace, by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to observe their looks, and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that when her Grace was going to retire, he boldly stepp'd up to her, and begg'd leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Tho' the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow Protestants in GERMANY. *He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.*

THE great honour of this private audience, at first put him into some confusion, but recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that, 'sensible of her Grace's great humanity and commiseration for the sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just given so noble an instance.'—'Pray, my Lord, no compliments, (said her Grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging) I am not at present at leisure for them, and if you have no other business?'—'May it please your Grace, (replied the Bishop) your virtues are above compliment! and I come to give you an op-

Digitized by Google

portunity of exerting them, not ſolely to praiſe them.' —'I do not underſtand you, my Lord, and I am in ſome haſte!'—'I moſt humbly beg your Grace's pardon, I ſhall not delay you long! to come then briefly to the purpoſe, I muſt inform your Grace, that out of the income which it has pleaſed the divine Providence, through your Grace's means, to give me, I have thought it my duty to lay by ſome little matter, to make a return with, to the divine beneficence, in charity to his diſtreſſed creatures. Now, as your Grace's kind intereſt was the means through which this ability was conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble you with the diſtribution of my mite.'—'Me, my Lord? You aſtoniſh me! I cannot comprehend you!'—'I beg your Grace's indulgence for a moment. You will forgive this boldneſs, when you know the motive.—Hem!—hem!

'The ſuffering of my Proteſtant brethren in Germany, (I ſay brethren, for men ſhould know no diſtinction, but religion) their ſufferings, I ſay, in this calamitous time of war and rapine, when the ambition of princes works the ruin of their people, has made ſuch an impreſſion upon my heart, that I come to offer this ſmall matter to your Grace, to be applied to their relief, as your better knowledge ſhall ſee moſt proper: a trouble which I ſhould not have preſumed to give your Grace, did not I know that ſuch works of charity are a pleaſure to you; and that the better information which, in your high rank you muſt neceſſarily have, will enable you to apply it more effectually to their relief than I, in the darkneſs and ignorance of my humble ſtation poſſibly can. I am almoſt aſhamed of the ſmallneſs of the ſum, (it is but two thouſand pounds)

Digitized by Google

pounds) but it is all that I have yet been able to ſave; though I hope to give a better account of my ſteward-ſhip another time; and that I ſhall be found not to have buried my talent, eſpecially if it ſhould pleaſe the Divine Providence to raiſe me to an higher ſtation, and thereby put the means more liberally into my power.'—

'I moſt humbly beg your Grace's forgiveneſs of this intruſion on your time. I am, your Grace's moſt humble ſervant.'——'Stay, my Lord, (returned her Grace, with a look and accent ſoftened into the moſt engaging affability) Pray do not go; I ſee you ſo ſeldom, except in the crowd, that I cannot part with you ſo ſoon. I thank you for the confidence you place in me; and ſhall apply your charity to the beſt of my judgment. Poor people! they greatly want relief, and if the invincible fortitude of the Bulgarian monarch, does not extricate them ſoon, they will be entirely ruined. But every thing is to be hoped for, from ſuch an hero!

'You are very good to conſider the diſtreſſes of the poor people! there are few now who think of any thing but themſelves; ſo their appetites are ſatisfied, they have no feeling for what others ſuffer. But, my Lord, is there any thing I can ſerve you in? You may depend upon my intereſt at all times.'—'I am much beholden to your Grace! (replied his Lordſhip, elevated at ſuch an offer, and now ſecure as he thought of his hopes) I am much beholden to your Grace! I have had too much experience of your Grace's goodneſs to doubt it. Nothing, that I know of at preſent: if any thing ſhould happen, I ſhall be moſt grateful to your

Digitized by Google

Grace for your kind remembrance. We are all desirous of having our power to do good enlarged.'—

'Yes, my Lord; all good men, like your Lordship, are. It is a duty to desire so. But have you heard any thing of the Archbishop of — lately?'—'Not very lately, please your Grace.'—'I believe that old man will never die! He was taken with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire every moment. But he has got over it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for many years.'—'In-d-e-e-d!' 'What is the matter, my Lord? something seems to ail you.'—'A-a- sud-den -f-aint-ness has come -o-ver me; I -m-ust -beg -y--our Grace--'s p-ar-don, -I -am y-our-Grace--'s -m-ost h-h-hum-ble servant-;' with which words he made a bad shift to crawl out, muttering to himself—'O my money! my money! O this cursed dream: my money! my money!'

Her Grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into a loud laughter, 'And is it so, my good lord! does the wind sit that way? Then I can account for your charity. Ha! ha! ha!—But you are disappointed this time, and, I fear, will the next too, if you do not bid better. Two thousand, for five thousand a year! Is that your conscience! But it will never do.'—

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me to take a view of my new mistress' heart, as she sat at her toilet; I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being here my most

Digitized by Google

most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold, which my mistress had accumulated, having taken entire possession of her soul.

CHAP. VI.

The true use of court-favour. The Biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built, instead of an hen-coop; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common: A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress.

WHILE my late master retired, to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself with the virtuous reflection of so signal an act of charity, her Grace sat down to her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far completed that she could attend to other business, one of her most favoured domestics told her, that she had that very morning received an offer, from a man who kept a noted beer house, and shuffle board, for the place of tapster to the Lord Mayor, which she was sure her Grace's interest would readily obtain. 'Tapster! (answered her Grace) what is the value of that place? Reach me the list of employments, with their salaries and perquisites, out of that drawer! Let me see: Tapster to the Lord Mayor! aye, here it is! Well, and pray what does he offer for it?'—'A thousand guineas, please your Grace

Digitized by Google

(replied her woman) which I really think enough for it, conſidering every thing.'—'Do you indeed! But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as worth five hundred pounds a-year; and is that worth no more than a thouſand guineas! does the fellow value his own life only at two years purchaſe?'—'Five hundred pounds a-year! How can that be? The ſalary is no more than ſixty! There muſt be ſome miſtake in your return.'—'The ſalary! The ſalary ſignifies nothing, it is the perquiſites! The perquiſites are the thing! Do you think any place is valued by the ſalary? The perquiſites of this place are very conſiderable. Let me ſee! Why, he buys in all the gin and beer himſelf, for which he can charge what price he pleaſes; and then his own account is taken for the quantity that is drunk. Aye indeed, there muſt be a miſtake in the return to be ſure; but not of the kind you mean. The place is rated too low; for with ſuch opportunities, it muſt be worth twice the ſum; and I ſhall enquire into that matter before I diſpoſe of the place. A thouſand guineas for ſuch a place! I wonder at the fellow's conſcience, to make ſuch an offer!'—'All this is very true; but then there are ſome circumſtances that muſt be conſidered on the other hand too. You know the Lord Mayor's year is almoſt ended; and then who knows whether his ſucceſſor will continue all the ſervants or not. This one, it certainly is moſt likely he will not; for as he is a known enemy to gambling, and has publicly declared that he will put the laws in execution againſt all ſuch practices, it cannot be thought that he will permit a fellow who has kept an houſe that has been ſo notorious for it, and where ſo many men have been brought to the gallows, and their

families

Digitized by Google

families to beggary, to hold a place of such profit under him; beside, he has people of his own to provide for, who have served his father and himself in such a manner, as to deserve his confidence and regard, so that every chance (to speak in his own way) is against this man, which is so well known, that nobody else would bid for the thing at all; wherefore, if I may presume to speak my opinion, his offer should be immediately accepted.'—'There may be something in what you say; but then, if it was so very precarious a place, do you think some of his customers would not inform him of it! they certainly must know it.'—'Why the very reason of my desiring your Grace to close with him directly is for fear they should tell him, as they undoubtedly would, if they suspected his intention in the least; but he conceals it from them; for the principal motive of his quitting the business he is in, and seeking this place, is because the greatest part of his customers have got deeply into his debt, which he can never expect them to pay while he continues his business; whereas he thinks, if he can get this place, it will be a good excuse for his calling in his money, and then the Lord Mayor's power will protect him from their resentments. This is the true secret of the matter; for if it was not on this account, he has a much better opportunity of getting money where he is than in any place.'——'Well then, be it so! make the most you can of it; and I care not how soon the fellow is turned out after. What is the matter? what do you laugh at?'—'I beg your Grace's pardon, an odd thought just came in my head; but it does not signify.'——'What is it? Come, I must know it.' 'Why, I am almost ashamed to mention

Digitized by Google

tion it; though it is but a trifle neither, as ſuch matters go now. Your Grace knows that my huſband has a place under the Lord Mayor! Now it juſt came into my head, that when his Lordſhip comes to wait upon the king to be knighted, it would be no bad joke, if his majeſty could be prevailed on, to knight my huſband alſo.'—'Ha! ha! ha! And ſo Madam has a mind to be a Lady. Why, with all my heart! There is no great matter in it, to be ſure; and I ſee no reaſon why you ſhould not have that title as well as a chandler, or ſhoemaker's wife. Indeed, the candidates for knighthood have run ſo very low of late, that a man of honour ſhould be aſhamed to accept of it. But that is no concern of mine! I got the money, and where I can do that, I care not if it was from Jack Ketch: let others look to that. Well, ſince you have taken a fancy to ſtick a fool's feather in your cap, tell your good man, when he kneels by his maſter, at the important ceremony, not to be too haſty to riſe, and I'll take care your ambition ſhall be ſatisfied; though I do not know what we muſt do then. Your Ladyſhip will never condeſcend to put on my ſhoes, or take away the bed-pan: ſo that I believe I muſt look out for another ſervant.'—'Your Grace is pleaſed to joke; but you are very well convinced, that I have no ambition above your ſervice; and ſhall ever be proud to perform the meaneſt offices about you. Indeed, in this affair, I have more reſpect to your Grace's honour, than to myſelf. While I wait upon you, (and I would not give up that to be made a Counteſs) I am but your ſervant, let me be called by what title I will; but then I think it is not proper that you ſhould be waited on by common ſervants, like any other perſon of your

Digitized by Google

your apparent rank. As you are the fountain of all honour, and nobility, you ſhould have nobles to attend you, as well as knights, if I could have my wiſh. And it was this tenderneſs of your Grace's honour, that made me ſo particularly affected at what happened yeſterday?' — 'Yeſterday! I do not underſtand you! What happened yeſterday?' — 'Your Grace may remember that you were ſo kind, ſome time ago, as to obtain leave for me from the Lord of the Manor, to build a little poultry-houſe in a corner of yonder common field. I accordingly ſet the maſons at work, and liking the ſituation, thought it was no great treſpaſs to enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, with a room or two where I could have my cloaths waſhed, and drink a diſh of tea, with a friend at any time I might have a mind to be retired; but behold, after the wall of the yard was built, and the lodge raiſed as high as the firſt ſtory, the Bailiff of the Manor happened to come by, and ſeeing what I intended, had the inſolence to fly into a paſſion, and ſaying it was an encroachment beyond the leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen to pull down every ſtone they had laid, though I myſelf, on receiving notice of it, went there, and told him it was by your Grace's order, and for your own uſe, and alledged the expence you had been at; but it was all to no purpoſe, for he would not leave the place till his orders were executed: nor was this all; he has had the aſſurance alſo to ſend me word this very morning, that he would diſtrain the cows that you deſired me to put to graze in that field, if I do not directly pay for their paſture, according to the rate he is pleaſed to charge; which is more than I have been able to make of the milk; though

Digitized by Google

though by your Grace's recommendation, I have had so good customers for it; so that instead of the profit I expected to make for you, of your dairy, your Grace is like to be a loser.'—'Insolent unreasonable fellow! Not to be content with his own extravagant profits, without hindering every body else of coming in for the least advantage with him: but he has neither shame, nor conscience, or else he would be satisfied with plundering the ponds, and sell the fish, and hiring out the grass as he does, without putting the parish to the expence of fencing in the common, to prevent the people even from walking over the grass! But I may, some time or another, find a way to be even with him. He stands but badly in his master's favour, who despises such avarice, and would turn him out of his place directly, but that unluckily he has it under his hand for life; however, I shall watch every opportunity to return him the compliment, that I can assure him. Let him take such liberties with his equals! I'll have him to know, that he shall treat me with more respect.'

'That is true! Has your Grace heard, how cavalierly he behaved lately to the young Lord ——? I forget his name. The great Beau that made such a noise, by dangling after the gentleman's wife.'—'I know whom you mean: No! I have heard nothing about him, what has been the matter?' 'Ha! ha! ha! I do not believe I shall be able to tell it for laughing. Why, your Grace must know, that the Beau was walking one morning, in a very plain dress, across the upper part of the common, where happening to meet a farmer's maid, going to drive home her cows, he entered into chat with her, and prevailed upon her to quit the path, and walk with him into an unfre-

quented

Digitized by Google

quented part of the field, where they ſat down under a clump of trees, for the ſake of a little very innocent converſation, to be ſure. Well: they had not been there long, when one of the under-bailiffs, whom this inſolent fellow keeps to watch the graſs, ſeeing them go out of the road, followed them; and coming upon them, in a very unſeaſonable minute, not only interrupted their converſation, but alſo aſked the Lord (whoſe quality he never ſuſpected) in an imperious manner, how he dared to trample the graſs, and threatened to take him and his whore before a juſtice, and have them directly ſent to Bridewell. This inſult aggravated the offence of his intruſion to ſuch an height, that the Lord in a rage bade the ſcoundrel inſtantly get out of his ſight, or he would break his head. Such words from a perſon of his appearance, raiſed the inſolence of office ſo high, that the Bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his ſtaff, and knocked his Lordſhip down, where he belaboured him ſeverely, repeating the word Scoundrel, between every blow, till the poor battered Beau was in a moſt doleful plight, though he had often told him who he was, and roared out his quality, with all his might; but the enraged fellow either did not, or pretended that he did not believe him.

'When he had beaten him as much as he thought he could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged him along to the high-way, where fortunately a coach happened to come by, the owner of which knew his Lordſhip, and took him up, ordering his ſervants to apprehend the Bailiff; but he was too nimble for them, and made his eſcape; and now finding his miſtake, and the danger into which he had fallen, he went directly

to

Digitized by Google

to his master, and telling him the story, in the most favourable manner for himself, prevailed upon him to promise to stand by him; particularly as he alledged that the affair had proceeded from his great care of his master's grass, which could never be kept, if he should be let to suffer for defending it.

In the mean time the poor Lord was in so very bad a taking, that all the physicians and surgeons in town were gathered about him; by whose assistance he was confined to his bed, for near a week. As soon as he was permitted to speak and see his friends, he sent directly to the head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had used him; but all the satisfaction he could obtain, even when he went and applied in person, was to have the fellow removed to another part of the common; nor could he obtain this, till he declared that he would make his complaint directly to the Lord of the Manor, if he had not some redress: It is said, he talked of challenging him, but he is one of the grand jury of the court leet, and therefore cannot be called to an account that way.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

will, I do believe there is truth in dreams, and I think mine is out now.'

She had run on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the Bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined; but that was far from being the case; he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stopp'd, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his Lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the Doctor's living, and as such resolved to humour it, and not to interrupt his meditations, but addressing herself to the other, 'Indeed, madam, (said she) I do not know what to say to this affair! When you told me your dream just now, I made nothing of it, but this account of his Grace's death almost staggers me! Well, if this succeeds, and who knows what may happen? I shall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams.

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer, 'Pray, madam, (said he) what time had you this vision or dream? In the night or towards the morning?' 'In the morn-

Digitized by Google

ing, my Lord, (replied she) at the conclusion of my second sleep; and indeed it made such an impression upon my mind, that I could not go to sleep after: for it was not in the confusion of common dreams! I saw every thing distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very place; and particularly your Lady appeared as plainly to me as she sits there, Lord bless us! and by the same token, she was dressed in white damask, spick and span new, and had the most beautiful diamond necklace on, that ever my eyes beheld; and charmingly she look'd, I thought.

'I really do not know what to say to this matter, (replied his Lordship with great deliberation;) the visions of the morning have ever been held in most repute; for then the mind has recovered from the fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert its abilities, and look forward into the time to come. There are some good circumstances, I own, in this dream! I am glad that my wife was not dressed in colours; that would have been an ill omen; but white is the peculiar garment of success; angels are clad in white! and in this case particularly, it may prefigure the episcopal lawn, as that is an emblematical type of the purity of the episcopal function; and the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only in degree. As for the necklace, there may be more in that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are the insignia of dignity, and in the Jewish priesthood particularly, were symbolical of the highest order; for none of the priests wore them but the supreme or high-priest, whose dignity answered nearly to that of Primate with us; and if such further blessings should be in the divine will, it were impious and ungrateful to refuse its favours. Perhaps I speak unintelligibly

Digitized by Google

legibly to you; but the opinions of the learned must be delivered in their phrase.'—'Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could hear your Lordship for ever; I always am the wiser and the better for hearing your Lordship.'

'Then as to the credit to be given to dreams, (resumed his Lordship) though the scepticism of these unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of wiser antiquity was of another opinion, of which numberless instances might be given out of the holy Scriptures. And among the Gentiles, the greatest of their poets says, Onar ek Dios esti; that is, in English, dreams proceed from Jove, that is from the supreme Deity, whom they erroneously called by that name. And though the heathens were guilty of great superstitions in this particular of dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them, but in the methods which they used to procure them; such as offering sacrifices and sleeping in the skins of the victims, and many others; whereas, the dream that comes from heaven, comes unsought and unexpected, and should be received with reverence! And if this is such, and I own it has much of the appearance, Thy will be done, O Lord! Thy servant submits as it is his duty!'

Greatly as they must have been edified by his elaborate dissertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, especially his wife, who knew not which to admire most, the readiness of the thought, or the ease with which it was received. But the dreamer had a farther scheme in her head, to carry on which she now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Bishop, 'My Lord, (said she) may I beg your Lordship's blessing! I hope, and am confident in that hope, that mine was not a

Digitized by Google

common dream, from the impreſſion it made on my mind, which could not have been ſtronger, if I had actually been preſent at your Lady's kiſſing the King's hand on your promotion: but if my zeal has hurried me too far in my expreſſions of it, I rely on your goodneſs to forgive my fault, which was rather an enthuſiaſm than a deſign; and ſo, my Lord, I beg leave to wiſh you a good night.

With theſe words ſhe withdrew; and her patroneſs wondering ſhe had not thrown her a wink, and deſirous to have a laugh with her at her huſband's credulity, went as to ſee her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That was an excellent thought, (ſaid ſhe) and will make our affair quite eaſy, if he is not engaged.—' I do not underſtand you, madam, (replied the other) pray what thought do you mean?—Why child that of the dream; what elſe ſhould I mean? A thought, dear madam! Why do not you think I was ſerious, and the dream real?—' Not one word of either, I aſſure you; and I wonder at your aſking me that queſtion here, where no one is preſent to obſerve us!'—' Dear madam, you have quite miſtaken me, I aſſure you. It is true, I can jeſt ſometimes; but in this, give me leave to ſay, that I was moſt ſerious; and what is more, that I am ſure the event will confirm it.'—You aſtoniſh me, madam; I declare I looked upon the whole as a meer fineſſe, to promote our ſcheme about the Doctor's living for your huſband!—' I am ſorry, madam, that you ſhould have ſuch an opinion of me, as that I could invent ſuch a ſtory on any account!'—' Well, (as I ſaid before, though in another ſenſe) I know not what to make of the whole! But as you are ſo poſitive, and my Lord ſeems inclined to believe you, per-

Digitized by Google

perhaps there may be more in it than I can see; and therefore I shall suspend my opinion, till I see the end of it. This though I promise that my assistance shall not be wanting to either part of the dream,'—'And I promise you that I will make good all I said, particularly about the wager and the necklace; and so madam I wish you a good night, I shall do myself the pleasure to call and see how you are in the morning.'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the Bishop's Lady into a meditation as profound as his Lordship's. 'Can this be possible? (said she to herself) and yet, how could she have the face to stand it out so, if it was not true? But then it was but a dream! Aye, but my husband says, dreams are not to be slighted: and he should know more than I, at least of those things that are to be found in books. And what if it should be so after all? and that I should take place of Mrs ——, and Mrs ——, and Mrs — —, and all the rest of the Bishop's Ladies!—That would be charming! And I believe in my soul I shall; for I have always look'd upon them with a contempt that shew'd I should be one day their superior. Well, Happy come lucky, says the proverb; my endeavours shall not be wanting, as I promised Mrs ——, whose five hundred pounds will be a pretty earnest of the Archbishoprick.'

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief of the dream, she went in to his Lordship, whom she found absorbed in thought about the vision. Well, my dear, (said she, sitting down by him) what is your opinion of this strange matter? I own it is above my comprehension! At first I imagined she might have been only in jest, and have invented the whole story merely to divert your lowness of spirits; but when I went out with

Digitized by Google

her into the next parlour, and put it home to her, ſhe ſtill perſiſted in it, and confirmed the truth of what ſhe ſaid, by ſuch aſſeverations, that I could not avoid believing her.'

'But, my dear, (replied his Lordſhip) ſhe ſaid ſhe told you her dream before ſhe came in here, or had heard a word of his Grace's illneſs!'—'She moſt certainly did, my Lord; and with other circumſtances, that make the whole ſtill more ſurpriſing! Pray what time did the Doctor die, my dear!'—'About half an hour after four.'—'That is moſt wonderful! and pray, my dear, who is to have his living? are you under any engagement about it?' 'No child, I am not; nor have I yet determined whom to give it to. But why do you aſk theſe queſtions? What are they to the purpoſe of the dream?'—'I ſhall tell you, my Lord. You muſt know then that ſhe came here about four o'clock, juſt as I had got up from dinner, all in the greateſt hurry; and with a kind of wildneſs, I do not know how, in her looks, told me her dream; but with ſome circumſtances that I know her baſhfulneſs would not permit her to mention before you; and theſe were, that I had bought the diamond necklace ſhe thought I had on at court, with five hundred pounds which I had won from her, on a wager that you would give her huſband the Doctor's living. Now as he was not even ſick at the time of her telling me this, there could be no deſign in it; and this is what makes me take the more notice of the matter.'

'But are you ſure child, that ſhe told you this ſo early as four o'clock?'—'Rather before it, my dear; and what makes me ſo poſitive about it is, that a little after ſhe had finiſhed her ſtory, ſhe happened to look

Digitized by Google

look at her watch, but it was down; and so she asked me what o'clock it was by mine, that she might set by it: and I remember it wanted exactly six minutes of four.'—'Pray let me look at your watch; have you not altered it since?'—'No, my dear; but why do you ask?'—'Because it is nine minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when he died, and his and mine were exactly together; so that the six minutes which your watch wanted of four, and the nine minutes it is faster than mine, make a quarter before four; which was three quarters before he died. This is most wonderful! for there could be no design or art in it. This is most wonderful! But there have been many revelations made in dreams, even in our own times, as for instance that in DRELINCOURT; for it could be no other than a dream; and that other of the great Duke of BUCKINGHAM's rise, and afterwards of his death, as it is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian*, not to mention many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to whom you please: though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family; beside that, he has been recommended to me by the whole parish, whom his long residence among them, for he has been there above thirty years, has made love and respect him as a father.'—'Then let them provide for him, like dutiful children. What assurance to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of such matters! if it was for no other reason I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time.'

* Echard.

'There

Digitized by Google

'There may be something in that, I do not like such interfering in my conduct neither; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character too, who will not discredit any preferment; but take care that you do not do any thing improper. As to your wager, there is no harm in that; but even so, it should be kept a secret; I must know nothing of the matter.'—'I thank you, my dear Lord; I shall be sure to observe your directions; and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take as an happy presage of the rest; but you must not be wanting to yourself; you had better, I think, go to her Grace, and see what may offer to promote our hopes.'—'That is not a bad thought, my dear; but it grows late; in the morning we shall see what is to be done.' Saying this, they withdrew, whither we must not follow them; for of the genial bed, with most mysterious reverence, I deem.'

CHAP. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. Chrysal *enters into the service of her Grace.*

I HAVE observed your surprise and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment, invent such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the Bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was, in a manner, in the secret of her design, but could

Digitized by Google

could not interrupt my ſtory to ſatisfy it ſooner, by giving you her hiſtory.

She was a diſtant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependant. This occaſioned her being taken into his family, where ſhe lived ſeveral years as an humble companion to his Lady. As ſhe was handſome, his Lordſhip had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfaſhionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the ſtrongeſt hatred, for fear ſhe ſhould inform his Lady, to whom ſhe was not more agreeable; and upon the ſame account, as her obſerving temper had given her an opportunity of ſeeing much more than her Ladyſhip deſired to have her tell.

This made her ſituation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addreſſes of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordſhip gave a ſmall vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to ſpeak. As for herſelf, you have ſeen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the ſtate ſhe was bred in improved, or rather ſharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enabled her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Biſhop and his Lady. This affair had made ſuch an impreſſion on their minds, that they could dream of nothing elſe all night, but pomp and precedence, which effectually ſecured the grant in favour of my late miſtreſs, from all danger of revocation.

They were ſcarce ſeated to breakfaſt, when word was brought them that ſhe was below; upon which ſhe was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any diſtance or reſerve.

Digitized by Google

T

The compliments of the morning being paid on all sides, his Lordship, with a look of great benevolence, asked her for her husband, and if he was at home; to which she answered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be disagreeable, I hope, (replied his Lordship) and if he is at leisure.'—'At leisure, my Lord! (replied she in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained the matter to her) he is, he must be at leisure! No business can interfere with his duty! I'll step for him this moment.'—'You need not give yourself that trouble madam, returned his Lordship) John, do you go and tell Mr—— that I should be glad to speak with him. For madam, I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, piety, and good life, with the living of the poor Doctor. It is what I have long resolved, though I never mentioned it before, because I would not torture him with expectations; and I give it to him now, thus early and unasked, to spare his modesty, and save myself from the solicitations of others.'—'Long live, God bless your Grace! (said she, throwing herself at his feet, and embracing his knees in extasy) for so I see it will be, every thing will come out just according to my dream! I could not forbear sending to the late Archbishop's just before I came here, and the porter (for I would not send a servant, for fear my known attachment to your Lordship should make it taken notice of) brought me word, that he was at peace.'—This completed the Bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to enquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

'I must wish you joy, madam, (said the Bishop's Lady) of this advance in your fortune! Though I am almost

Digitized by Google

almoſt angry that my Lord did not let me into the ſecret. I have loſt ſome hours happineſs by his reſerve; for I always make the happineſs of my friends my own."—'Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both! And give me leave, madam, to wiſh YOU joy of his LORDSHIP's promotion, and of your juſt advance in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to it!'—'The necklace, I ſuppoſe you mean? Ha, ha, ha!'—'I do, indeed, dear madam, and of every other happineſs that can attend ſo elevated a ſtation.'

Her huſband now entered in the utmoſt agitation of ſpirits, between hope and fear; for he was not a ſtranger to his wife's ſcheme (indeed he had ſuggeſted the firſt hint of the bett himſelf, but with an addreſs that made her think it was her own, he ſpoke ſo diſtantly, for he always preſerved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be preſent at the myſterious ceremony of the Biſhop's ſigning the collation, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence by refuſing other applications, they withdrew; when my miſtreſs was paid her bett, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The dream being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſsful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependance, and the fears of want: while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her Grace's levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called his Lady, to receive her advice; and recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, deſired to borrow hers, in which I was; and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When

Digitized by Google

When his Lordſhip entered her Grace's levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his dioceſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this misfortune as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her Grace, who ſaid that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank-note of twenty pounds about her.

All the company, who knew the world, underſtood her Grace, and dropped the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of mankind moſtly from books, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhewed his reſpect for his patroneſs, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Her Grace was ſurpriſed, as the company were confounded, at the ignorant inſolence of ſuch an offer. However as this was not an occaſion for ſhewing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſsly threw the reſt, among which I was, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purſe, as it was full of money.

My late maſter, pleaſed with the thought of having been inſtrumental in ſo notorious a benevolence; diſplayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himſelf; (for reſpect to her Grace would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty,) as did the reſt of the

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress' face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a person of her rank. The most shabby, squalid dress covered a distorted carcase, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow nearly as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her Grace, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon business, told her, 'that he came to know if she meant to buy in that day, for the report raised in the Alley, by their express from abroad, had given such a stroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to the ground; but would most certainly rise again the next day, as soon as the news, which had arrived that morning, should be known; which could not be kept a secret, as the people wanted something to keep up their spirits, among so many miscarriages, and divert

Digitized by Google

the granting them. But these œconomists will find themselves mistaken. The world is wiser now a days, than to give up advantages which they have once got possession of. As to that affair, therefore, I should think it better to let it stand a little longer, till the necessity becomes more urgent, and then they will be glad to come into our terms, if it were not that the poor people may be ruined in the mean time; so that indeed I am at a loss what to advise your Grace to do in so nice an affair.'

'Why, let them be ruined then: it is not my fault; nor is it my business to save them; nor will I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do suffer by the delay, those who gave them this supply to prevent their ruin, may give them another to repair it.'—'I cannot but admire your Grace's judgment in all things. You are above the foolish weakness of nature, and have the noble resolution to see your own family perish, rather than injure your own interest to relieve them. I shall obey your Grace in all things. I go now to the Abbey, where business will soon begin'——'Do, honest Aminadab, and fear not; though I could not procure an establishment for your whole nation, as I would have done, I certainly will for your family, and that is enough for you. Your son shall be made a BARONET at least; you have riches enough to support the title.'

'Your Grace is very good; our people are all satisfied of your kind intentions: But, alas! that was a severe disappointment to us, after costing us so much money. The children of the Lord weep over it in their synagogues, and the daughters of Sion lament it in their songs; but my household shall rejoice in thy favour,

Digitized by Google

favour, and the labours of my life prove my gratitude for it.'

'Honeſt Aminadab was no ſooner gone, than there entered an agent ſeemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the others did in money, but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both ultimately the ſame.

'May it pleaſe your Grace, (ſaid he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony) I come to wait upon you, about that place in the ——: that gentleman will not, indeed cannot give one ſhilling more for it.'—'Then let the other have it; I will not loſe five pence, much leſs five hundred pounds for him.'—'But, pleaſe your Grace, you know what grounds he has to expect it on; beſides your promiſe, which cannot be well broken through, it was ſo poſitive.'—'My promiſe was only conditional (in my own intention) that he ſhould give me as much as another, and in no other ſenſe will I keep it. As for his grounds of expectation I regard them not: let him make the moſt of them where he can.'—'Juſt as your Grace pleaſes; I only took the liberty of ſpeaking my own opinion, but always in ſubmiſſion to your's. Not but I muſt own I am apprehenſive of this gentleman's reſentment, though not immediately for myſelf, ſo much as for your Grace's character, with which he may be provoked to make too free upon ſuch an affair.'—'Aye! that is liberty, your boaſted Engliſh liberty, to ſpeak diſreſpectfully of your ſuperiors. But I deſpiſe whatever he can ſay; nor will I give up my own way for fear of his impertinence.'—'Very right: your Grace is very right. It were by no means fit that you ſhould: but then it is to be conſidered, whether this breach of promiſe may not be at-

Digitized by Google

tended with inconveniences, that may overbalance the advantages, as it may make others afraid to deal with you another time.'—I will venture that: none come to me but for their own advantage, and while they can find that, they will scarce stay away for punctilios. So let me hear no more of this, but close with the other directly.

'Will not your Grace please to abate of your demand for that place in Ireland? I really fear you rate it too high.'—'Not a shilling! I will not abate a shilling! Surely I ought to know the value of things in IRELAND by this time! I have had sufficient dealings there to teach me; it has been my privy purse for many years.'—'But what I fear is, that if your Grace does not fix upon some one directly, the Lord deputy may, and that would disappoint you; for this place has ever been immediately in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dishonour on him to give it up.'—'Dishonour indeed! I am much concerned for his honour certainly! And as for his naming any one to contradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he does that. The example of his predecessor will teach him.'—'However, if your Grace pleases, to prevent any disputes, I will wait on him, and tell him that you have a friend, whom you design to recommend.'—'With all my heart; you may if you will. But as to the price, I will not abate one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know that places in that country are either mere pensions, without any thing to do, or even necessity of ever going there at all; or where that cannot be dispensed with, from the nature of the place, that no learning, no abilities are requisite. If it was here indeed, where knowledge in a profession is absolutely necessary to a place in it, there might

Digitized by Google

might be something in higgling about the price, but for a coward to scruple paying for being made a general, or a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more unreasonable; and I will not hear another word about it.——But what have you done about those titles, which I gave you to dispose of?—Really I do not know what to say to your Grace about them: the bent of the people does not seem to incline to honours of late.'—'No I thought they were always as good as ready money; especially with those who have more money than sense, and think it easier to buy, than earn honour by merit. An IRISH title was the constant refuge of those sons of fortune, who not being born in the rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their villainies, were desirous of changing their names for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace, as it were, under a heap of honours, which in reality only make them the more exposed to the view, and consequently to the censure of the world. ——But I find, even that imaginary sense of honour is gone out of fashion, and the shadow is in no more request than the substance at present. But since they are grown such a drug, even make the most you can of them: sell them to whoever will buy; I shall make no exceptions of persons.'

'I shall certainly do the best I can for your Grace, though they have been so oddly given away of late, that I verily believe people are ashamed of taking them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are given to children, but titles to old men, to divert them; to some, in reward for not doing the very worst possibly in their power; and to others, for doing nothing at all.—But pray, has your Grace seen the old colonel yet? he got his commission yesterday, I wish he may mean your Grace fairly.'

Digitized by Google

fairly.'—Why? sure you do not imagine he can have the assurance to think of playing me a trick?'—'I do not positively say so: but his behaviour has been very mysterious.'

Just then, a servant let her Grace know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, desired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought so, (said she) shew him up: I thought he would not dare to trifle with me!'

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

THE colonel advanced to her Grace with the assurance of conscious virtue sparkling in his eye, though sharpened by a cast of indignation. 'I come (said he) please your Grace, to return you my thanks for your favours: I have got my commission, and had the honour, just now, to kiss his majesty's hand upon it; and as your recommendation was more effectual to procure me this reward than the labours of a life, which has not been undistinguished in the service, I thought it my duty to make your Grace this acknowledgment, and to offer you any service in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand, in return.' 'Colonel (replied her Grace) I am glad that it has been in my power to serve a man of your character, and I do not desire any such return.'—'I am much obliged to your Grace for your good opinion (returned he) which I hope I shall never

Digitized by Google

never forfeit. I thank God, my character will not disgrace your recommendation; nor shall you ever have reason to blush at the mention of my name. I have the honour to be your Grace's most humble servant.'

'But colonel (said the gentleman, the agent, who stood by) though her Grace has no occasion for such a return as you offer, having no quarrels to be fought, there is a return of another nature, which you should not forget, especially as you promised it too.'—'Why look you, Sir, (replied the colonel) as to that matter, it is most certain that I did, something like, promise some such thing, but when I have told the whole affair honestly to her Grace, I am sure she will be above demanding it.'—'Sir, (said her Grace) I do not desire to hear any thing more about it! and I must tell you that you have behaved like an old knave.'—'Say an old soldier rather, madam, (replied he, with some warmth) the other is a term I am not used to.'—'A nice distinction truly, and well worthy of a man of honour, (said the agent with a sneer')—'Have a care, Sir, guard your expressions; my respect, my obligations to her Grace will make me bear any thing from her, but I must be so free as to tell you, that I have not the same sentiments for you.'—'What, are you going to make a riot in my apartments!'—'Not in the least, madam; my respect for your Grace is a sufficient security from that, I would only hint it to that gentleman, that he may not always have the protection of your Grace's presence; that is all, madam,'—'You are a knavish old ruffian. But I shall take care that you do not come off so.'—'As your Grace pleases for that. By the laws of my country I cannot lose my commission while I do my duty, nor will my gracious master be

Digitized by Google

be influenced to do me wrong, though, in the multiplicity of greater affairs, my services, my hardships could not reach his eye. But as I would not bear the imputation of any crime, much less, so black ones, as dishonesty or ingratitude, you must give me leave to set this affair in a just light to your Grace now, especially as I may never have another opportunity of doing myself that justice.'

'Enraged almost to desperation to find that thirty years service, the merits of which were often written in my blood, and stand recorded in these scars, were not sufficient to procure me the regular advances of my rank, without a merit of another nature, I resolved to quit the barren paths, which I had so long pursued in vain, and try those methods which I saw practised with success by others: I therefore applied myself to your Grace, who seemed struck with my hardships, and promised me your favour; referring me, for more particular information, to this gentleman, who would have lowered my sense of your goodness, by loading it with terms, which were not in my power to fulfil.

'Had your Grace mentioned them to me yourself, I should most certainly have owned my inability; but coming from him, I looked upon them as the fineſſe of his own art, which it was not unjustifiable to return with a feint of mine; and therefore I gave an equivocal acquiescence with his proposal, for he dares not say I made a particular or positive promise of any thing.

'If I have done wrong in this I am mistaken, and sorry for it, but still it is not within the article of war, that makes an error in judgment criminal, because it was not against an enemy; but by all the rules of war, and

Digitized by Google

and that is my profeſſion, and the only one that I have ſtudied, it is allowable to oppoſe art to art, and try to foil the devil at his own weapons. This is what I have done; and the ſucceſs of this ſtratagem, which has effected by a Coup de main what I had been making regular advances to, ſo long in vain, proves the juſtneſs of my plan, and muſt extort your Grace's approbation, when the paſſion raiſed by this gentleman's mercenary influence ſhall cool.'

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my miſtreſs and her agent ſtaring at each other in the ſtrongeſt ſurpriſe.

Her Grace found utterance firſt, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent, 'So then (ſaid ſhe) after all, I find the old ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promiſe, or no promiſe at all, it ſeems, for you did not dare to contradict him. I thought, Sir, that I had cautioned you before againſt this very thing, and given you poſitive orders to take nothing but the money. But you ſhall pay for your neglect! you ſhall make good the loſs to me. As for the old ruffian, I will ſpeak to his general, and have him broke for a cheat. Talk to me of his ſervices! what are his ſervices to me; but I will have him broke; his example ſhall terrify others from attempting to abuſe me ſo again.

'I wiſh it were proper or poſſible (replied her agent, as ſoon as want of breath made her ſtop) for your Grace to have him puniſhed for his inſolence; but ſuch a tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once ſet a going, for you ſee he is not to be overawed to any thing. As for his commiſſion, there is no loſs in it; for it was ordered for him before I applied; though I made him

Digitized by Google

think it was obtained by your intereſt, to try what I could bring him to. Your Grace may be aſſured that I would not have taken any promiſe, had it been otherwiſe; and I was juſt going to tell you this, when his coming prevented me.'—'It may be ſo (returned ſhe); but I ſhall be better ſatisfied of it, before I give up your making good the loſs.'

The agent was relieved from farther perſecution for that time, by the entrance of a meſſenger, who was going to Germany, and called to know if her Grace had any commands for her friends there. 'None but my good wiſhes and prayers for their deliverance, (replied ſhe with a deep drawn ſigh) which are conſtantly offered up for them. I am ſorry I am not able to ſend them any relief from myſelf; but I have nothing in my power, no places, no opportunities of getting any thing; theſe few pieces (taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where ſhe had thrown the Biſhop's change of her note) are all at preſent in my poſſeſſion; give them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will ſend her the cloaths ſhe wrote for as ſoon as poſſible; and aſſure the reſt of my friends of my conſtant attention to their intereſts.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL changes his service for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble invitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAL *into the possession of a person of an extraordinary character. Conversation between him and a very noted person. Let those laugh that win.*

I WAS, by this time, so sick of High Life, that I was very glad of being one of the number her Grace gave to the messenger, as I saw no prospect of pleasure in such a service. He had no sooner received her Grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his dispatches, where, he was sent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who sold glyster-pipes about the streets, but being unable to get bread in his profession, had fallen upon a scheme, that he imagined might raise him to the notice of the world, in the light of a state-criminal, and get his hunger well satisfied, while he should be an happy prisoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad consequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correspondence with some person abroad, of equal consequence with himself, and to him communicated the secret intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houses, or found in the public news-papers, which his

Digitized by Google

great friend was to forward to some great person in the service of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the post-office, but the stuff contained in them was thought below regard; so that he began to fear that his scheme would turn to no account. But now some miscarriages in public affairs alarming the resentment of the people, and making it evident that the secrets of the nation were betrayed, this insignificant creature was thought of and ordered to be taken into custody.

Though this was the thing which he had always proposed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the strongest terrors, and put on every appearance of conscious guilt, so far that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a sacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude; a just judgment on the base depravity of soul, that could descend to so iniquitous a scheme, as to trifle with his sacred duty to his country, to support an anxious burthensome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances which were before so very strong against him, but also made it probable that he was guilty of more than he was at first even suspected of; this justified the prosecuting him with the utmost severity, and sacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for some victim to atone for their reproachful losses.

The criminal soon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had said; but this was not admitted him; his own confessions had confirmed the charge against him, and he was given up to the laws; to which

Digitized by Google

on

on the evidence of such strong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved against him, but what he shewed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his station and behaviour proved his safety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had served the turn, and amused the people for his day.

I did not then stay in England, to see the event of this affair, but having learned it, since my return, I thought it better to conclude the story in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injustice to my master, to imagine that he had profited so little, by his frequent intercourse with persons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it necessary to apply the money she had given him, to any other use than his own: accordingly, when he was setting out, he gave me to his wife, for the support of his family, in his absence.

But this spirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herself any of the genteel pleasures of life, for the sake of such a mean domestic duty, as the care of a family. As soon therefore as his back was turned, she put on her hat and cardinal, and posted away to one of her most intimate acquaintances, a lady, who kept a chandler's shop in the neighbourhood, to advise with her about settling a party, at her house, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they sat in being open to the shop, so

Digitized by Google that

that they were liable to be overheard, by every one who should come in, and there, over a comfortable glass of right Holland's, fixed upon the company, and settled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great business being dispatched, my mistress returned home, and getting a gentleman, who lodged in her house at the expence of the state, to write cards for her, sent them by her husband's assistant to the company, to invite them to play a game of cards, and spend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation she made, raised my curiosity not a little, to see the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked, by such a set; but I was disappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern keeper, next morning, for wine and brandy, for the occasion.

My new master was a striking instance of the inconsistency of life, and the hypocrisy of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the most notorious brothel taverns in the town; but not content with this public insult to the laws, in defiance of every sense of shame, he at the same time professed himself a reformer of religion; and while the grossest scenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly, in his house, was chaunting hymns, in a conventicle, and groaning in spirit, for the wickedness of the times, with a face as meagre, and mortified as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which shews instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my

Digitized by Google

any master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct, as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pander, to such an house as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means he soon acquired a sum of money, sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business, that in a little time made his fortune; but for this success, he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner like a public saint, as soon as he thus rose above the drudgery of business, and from porter became master of the tavern, he associated himself with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces, for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practise the vices, which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his avarice, but the habit has taken such hold of him that he cannot desist, and he now does, from inclination, what was at first the effect of necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon his character, but that it serves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their course of life when-

Digitized by Google

whenever they pleaſe; and as ſoon as their end is anſwered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profeſſion, quit it at once, and live virtuouſly upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion, the high prieſt of the conventicle called upon him, to ſpend an hour in ſpiritual converſation. After examining into his progreſs in grace, and the increaſe of his faith, and aſſurance of election (for ſuch is the power of cuſtom, and the pleaſure of cheating the world, that they practiſe the art, even upon each other) he told him that he had a moſt particular occaſion for his moſt private room this evening; 'For (ſaid he, ſhaking him by the hand) my friend, as I have found by experience, that the only way to foil the Devil, is at his own weapons, I have appointed Momus the ballad-ſinger, whoſe attack upon me has made ſuch a noiſe, to meet me here this evening, and make up the affair over a glaſs of wine.'—'In truth (anſwered my maſter, a good deal ſurpriſed) your reverence's meekneſs and patience muſt needs be very great, or you could not bear ever to mention him, in any degree of Chriſtian charity and benevolence, after ſo outrageous and groſs an attack as he has made upon you, without the leaſt perſonal provocation; for what was it to him, what you ſaid or did to the reſt of the world, his morals or religion were in no danger! But you were born to be an example of the age, and a ſhining light to guide the ſteps of the faithful.'

'A truce with this canting now, my friend, (replied the Doctor) and let us talk a few words, like men of the world. Your proved fidelity and prudence, making me not ſcruple to reveal the whole myſtery

Digitized by Google

ſtery of the miniſtry to you, I will let you into the ſecret of this affair. You muſt know then, that I have, for ſome time, perceived the humour of the people begin to waver greatly, and the fervency of their devotion to cool, in ſpight of all I could do to keep it up, by preaching, faſting, prayer, and lamentation; by crying up my own piety, and the wonderful effects of my ſpiritual labours; it was neceſſary therefore to have recourſe to ſome new expedient, to prevent their falling off entirely, and accordingly I pitched upon this, which has exceeded my expectations; for inſtead of making my people aſhamed of coming to me, it has piqued their pride, and now they reſolve to ſhew that they ſcorn as much to be laughed, as preached out of their own way. This, my friend, is the way of the world, which, ſince we cannot in reality mend, we muſt only ſtrive to make the beſt of. If I could carry on my buſineſs without this aſſiſtance, I moſt certainly would never have entered into ſuch a confederacy, any more than you would keep a brothel, and entertain whores and rogues, if you could make equal profit by any other company.'

'I am much obliged to your reverence (returned my maſter) for putting me in any degree of compariſon with yourſelf; but it is too great an honour! I act in a low ſphere; but ſtill I have the pleaſure to think, that even in my poor way I contribute ſomething towards your great work; as there could not be ſo many converts to reſort to you for ſpiritual comfort, if there were no places of this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You ſee, Sir, that I enter into the ſpirit of your deſign, and deſerve your confidence, by this return of mine. There are ſecrets in all profeſſions,

Digitized by Google

feſſions, and as you have entered into a league with your profeſſed enemy, that you may be able to play into each other's hands, ſo I, notwithſtanding the probity of my profeſſions, have a private underſtanding with all the ladies of pleaſure who reſort this houſe, who in return for their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expence and countenance every impoſition of falſe meaſures, falſe charges, and a thouſand others, by which a prudent man turns the folly of the world to his own advantage. As to this confederacy between you and the ballad-ſinger, I own I never ſuſpected the leaſt of it; and indeed I ſtill am at a loſs to think how you could bear the perſonal reflections eſpecially, which he has thrown upon you. What was the misfortune of your form to him, that he ſhould call you Doctor Hunch-back!'—'Why, that is true enough (anſwered the Doctor) in that he exceeded my directions; and to call him to an account for it is part of the buſineſs of this appointment. Every thing elſe was ſettled between us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs Brimſtone's, who firſt negotiated the affair between us, and conſented to take her ſhare of the ridicule, to advance the common cauſe. She will be here to night too, ſo that we ſhall have an agreeable ſet. I believe I hear him juſt come in. I directed him to enquire for number one; do you ſhew him into the private room, and when the coaſt is clear, I'll join you.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's master starts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-singer. The history of a famous ballad. All trades alike.

THE person my master was sent to meet, had something so uncommon in his appearance, as instantly struck my attention. Every passion of the human heart was printed in his face so strongly, that he could at pleasure display it in all its force, while his every look and gesture turned some vice, or folly, into ridicule. 'You enquire for number one, Sir!' (said my master, bowing with the profoundest respect) 'I do, Sir,' (answered the other returning his bow, assuming his look and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from despair). 'enquire for number one.'

Though my master was no stranger to his talents, which he had often seen him display at the expence of others, this personal application of them to himself, threw him into such confusion, that in spight of his long practised assurance, a blush feebly broke through his unimpassioned lifeless face, and he had scarce power to shew him into the room. The ballad-singer seeing that he had him at command, would not pursue his advantage any farther at that time, for fear of frightening him away, but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, 'I am come, my friend and brother in the Lord (said he) to enquire into thy spiritual estate, to give

Digitized by Google

give thee ghostly advice, and commune with thee, for a short space, for our mutual edification.'—The surprise and manner of this address had such an effect upon my master, that he could not refrain bursting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confusion, into which the ridicule of himself had thrown him.

They were scarce seated, when the Doctor entered, and addressing himself to the stranger, 'I am glad to see you, Sir, (said he, taking him by the hand) and heartily congratulate you on your success! you see I was not mistaken in my judgment! I knew what would take with the taste of the public! There is nothing pleases them so much as a little profaneness, and ridicule of Religion! a fling at the Clergy never fail to raise a laugh.'—'I acknowledge your judgment, Sir,' (answered the other, raising up his shoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor's voice) 'and thank you for your congratulation; but I must beg leave to differ in opinion with you as to the cause of my success, for I have never had the least fling at the Clergy, nor been guilty of profaneness, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad; the abuse of religion, by hypocrisy, and making the profession of virtue a sanction for the practice of vice, were the objects of my satyr; and the reception it has met with from the public, shews that the people have a proper sense of such vices.'

The Doctor was so struck at the reflection of himself, when the other began to speak, that he started in the utmost astonishment, and was unable to interrupt him, till he had finished his discourse, which else he certainly would have done, while my master stood

Digitized by Google almost

almoſt convulſed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-ſinger turning ſhort upon him, and inſtantaneouſly aſſuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the ſame manner, 'and you, Sir,' (continued he, addreſſing himſelf to him) 'muſt have had ample experience in the courſe of your buſineſs, that the taſte of the town inclines quite another way, the moſt profligate in practice being the moſt pious in profeſſion.'

This ſudden tranſition from the Doctor reſtored him to his ſpirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing moſt immoderately at the ſilly look of my maſter, though he was not quite ſo much abaſhed as he had been before.

As ſoon as the Doctor could ſpeak. 'However I may doubt your opinion,' (ſaid he to the ballad-ſinger) 'I acknowledge the irreſiſtible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg a ceſſation of them, for a moment, till we talk of buſineſs. I will not diſpute about the cauſe of your ſucceſs, but I think you need not have fallen upon my perſon. My profeſſions and practice ſurely were enough, with your own exaggerations! Why then need you give me the opprobrious nick name of Hunch-back, which has ſpread ſo, that I ſhall never get rid of it? The very children haunt me with it, as I go along the ſtreet.'

'Good Heavens (anſwered the other) how ſubject are the wiſeſt men to the weakneſs of vanity! I ſhould have thought that you were long ſince proof to any thing the world could ſay of you, or you would have given up your trade before now. As my calling you this name, you muſt know, that the whole ſucceſs of our ſcheme depended upon it; for if I had not

Digitized by Google

not turned the ridicule againſt your perſon, the taſte of the public is ſo groſs, that I might have laughed alone, at your opinions. But what ſucceſs have you had? Do you find your flock gather upon this attack on their ſhepherd?—' Why, pretty well (replied the Doctor) pretty well. They ſeem to ſhew a proper ſenſe of it. As for me, I appear affected at it, in a very extraordinary manner, that is ſolely upon your account; and to convince them and all the world of the ſtrength of my charity, I deſign to-morrow to offer up prayers for your converſion, as being in a dangerous ſtate of ſalvation, and then on the merit of that, to propoſe a ſubſcription, for the relief of two or three families, whom your example has led into ruin.—Bravo, Doctor! (interrupted the other) tell me of profaneneſs again! But I hope I am to have a ſhare in the ſubſcription, as it is to be propoſed on my account; at leaſt,' you will let me aſſiſt in the diſtribution of it.—' Take care, my friend! (returned the Doctor) another word of that kind, and I declare off the connection. I will have no body pry into my conduct, or interfere with my buſineſs! I did not aſk any part of your gains, though you got ſo much in every company where you ſung your ballad; nor did I ſpeak a word in behalf of the other poor ballad-ſingers you picked up about the ſtreets, and ſet to ſing for you, though the wretches complained that you ſtarved them.'

The ballad-ſinger perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to wave it, as he did not chuſe to break off ſo advantageous a connection. ' As to that (ſaid he) I did but jeſt! I never interfere with any man's matters; but that's true! I have bad news to tell you! The clerk of the pariſh

Digitized by Google

sent me word yesterday, that understanding I sung my ballad to a psalm tune, he let me know that I must change my note directly, or he would order the beadles to whip me out of the parish, if I ever presumed to sing there again; and to mend the matter, at the same time ordered me to make use of an old blackguard tune which he sent me, the vulgar stupidity of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which was never turned against the tune itself, but solely against the prostitution of it; which can never be so effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner exactly in which it is sung. But where is our friend Brimstone? I expected to have met her here.'

Just as he said this, my master was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, supported by two chairmen, who enquiring in a feeble voice for number one, he directly shewed her in to the company.

CHAP. XI.

A venerable Matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and several unexpected discoveries made. MOMUS *plays successively upon Doctor* HUNCH-BACK, *and Mother* BRIMSTONE. *After various disasters, the evening is concluded in character.*

THE Matron, whom my master was handing in to his friends, displayed one of those figures which lose by the most forcible description: her face, though broken by debauchery and disease, preserved the remains of a most pleasing sweetness and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance, almost out of

Digitized by Google

every reſemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almoſt concealed a piece of greaſy flannel. Her gown, of the richeſt ſilk, flowed looſely round her, under a velvet cloak lined with ermine; while her legs and feet, ſwoln out of all ſhape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapt up in flannels.

My maſter received this amiable creature from the chairmen, and ſtooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, aſſiſted her to limp into the room. The contraſt between her and the ſhabby ſkeleton her ſupporter was ſo ſtrikingly ridiculous, that the moment they appeared, Momus burſt into an immoderate fit of laughter, and turning to the Doctor, (who was not much leſs affected, though practice had given him ſuch a maſtery over the muſcles of his face, that they never betrayed the paſſions of his heart;) 'Behold (ſaid he) the bleſſed fruit of thy miniſtry, and rejoice! See how the ſpirit aſſiſteth the fleſh, to ſtruggle with the infirmities of nature.'——And then waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother, (addreſſing himſelf to her) give me your other arm; reſt a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, upon me! Come! Let me help you into that great chair!'——'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones! (exclaimed ſhe) how you pull me along: you will tear me to pieces! oh! oh! oh!'——'Never fear, mother! never fear that! (anſwered he) Crazy as your carcaſe is, it will ſtick a little longer together! your friends are not ready for you yet.'——'Go! go! you're a wicked creature, a profane wretch.'——'Dear Doctor! I thought I ſhould never ſee you more! I had a ſad night

Digitized by Google

night of it; a most sad one indeed. But the spirit comforted me. Oh, if it were not for the comforts of the spirit, there would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was purely when you left me! Your pious conversation had comforted my heart; and the sober bottle we cracked together, raised my spirits so, that I forgot all my pains. But I was not to be so happy long! Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way!——This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his roaring companions came in upon me, just as you went out at the back-door! Well, to be sure, they have a great deal to answer for! I was just beginning to read the pious exhortation you left me, when in they came, snatched the book out of my hand, and calling for the Ladies, insisted upon my sitting with them; so, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, I could not refuse: but alas! I paid dearly for it this morning. My poor bones! and then my head! my poor head is quite gone, quite gone! I can bear nothing!—Oh what a difference there is between spending an evening in edifying conversation over a sober bottle, with a pious friend or two, and these ranting riotous scenes! though they behaved so like gentlemen, and were so good company, that there was no leaving them! But it is all folly! all vanity! I am resolved I will leave it off! I will not follow it much longer, I am resolved! I'll wean myself from this world, and think of nothing but a new life!—I hope the baronet won't use poor Betsy ill! I did not like his refusing to taste the ratifia! I should be ruined if any thing ailed her; she is more enquired for than all the Ladies in the house.—And my Lord! He is sweet company. But it is a pity he is so wicked! He was going to burn my book of

Digitized by Google

devout exercises; and then that profane song of yours! what need he sing that! I wonder what pleasure people can find in profaneness! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another thing; but this is being wicked for wickedness sake. It is a great pity, for he is a very generous, fine gentleman! He gave Poll ten guineas this morning! He's very fond of Poll; he always has her, when Betsey is engaged! Oh! oh! shall I ever get rid of these pains! when shall I be happy in heaven?

While she was running on thus, the Doctor was busied in writing a letter to himself, as from a family in distress, for whom he intended to solicit a subscription, the next day, from his congregation; and my master was laying glasses on the table, and drawing the corks out of several bottles, so that Momus alone attended to her; by the significant archness of whose look, it was easy to perceive that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse never so long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

'I am sorry, my friend, (said he, addressing himself to her) to hear you complain so; I left you in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night; but I much fear that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth, when he is full of wine: A little is good and rejoiceth the heart, but too much marreth the understanding, and letteth loose the secrets of the wise.'—'As for that there, dear Doctor, never fear me! Since the blessed hour of my call, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter; I never

Digitized by Google

never mentioned a word of it.——But, Doctor, what did you do with the young lady, whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be sure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head. She is very young, and likely to do a great deal of business, therefore her call need not come this great while; it will be time enough some years hence: I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and now if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. No body knows the trouble and expence I am at, for the service of the public! No body knows! If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with common servant maids, and such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them; Ladies of birth and education! and yet I am not regarded! no body thanks me: This is poor encouragement to serve the public, very poor indeed! But virtue is its own reward! That's my comfort. I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault: Let the world answer for it; I do my part, and so my mind is at ease.'

'That you do! (said Momus, while she stopped to drink) that you do! Your diligence never slackens? Come fill your glass. Here's to the reformation of manners, a work that we all labour in alike.'——By your leave, good Sir, (interrupted the Doctor, with a look and tone of offended importance) not all alike, I presume! I believe you will allow, that there is some difference between your profession and mine, at least.'——'So then (answered Momus) you are returning to the old point! I thought I had said enough to you on that head before: Difference! aye! that there is indeed; but perhaps you are not sensible in whose favour that

Digitized by Google

difference is! I ſing a ſong that makes people laugh, and put vice and folly out of countenance, by ſhewing them in a ridiculous light, and this only for a trifling pittance of that money which they devote to mere pleaſure; but you, by drawing horrors that never exiſted out of your own imagination, and preaching up doctrines impoſſible to practiſe, frighten your poor deluded followers, out of every enjoyment of their lives, and pillage them of the money that ſhould ſupport their families, and pay their debts, under a pretence of imaginary charities! This is the difference between us.'—— 'Good lack! good lack! (interrupted the ſage Matron) how can people be ſuch fools, as to fall out thus about nothing! What ſignifies it where the difference lies, ſo you can both do your buſineſs? It is juſt the ſame thing as if my landlord here, and I, ſhould enter into a diſpute about the reputation of our houſes. I thought I had made you both promiſe never to mention this matter any more. Come, Doctor! here is proſperity to all our buſineſs, without any ſuch fooliſh diſtinctions.'——

The judgment of this mediation was too plain to admit of any diſpute. The competitors filled their glaſſes, and ſhaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toaſt. 'Well now there is ſome pleaſure in this (continued ſhe;) things are like to go on well, when all parties agree; but when ſome people fall out——you know the reſt of the ſaying. ——But, my friend Momus, I have news for you! That ſtory of the young Lady, that you put in your ballad, has anſwered juſt as I ſaid. The world thought it would blow me up; but I knew better! I never had a greater run of company in my life, than to enquire into that affair; and they

Digitized by Google all

all of the right sort; your secret, grave, old, rich culls, just fit to do business with. At first I always deny it, with the strongest oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing such a scandalous story; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I seem to place a confidence in their professions of secrecy and friendship, and with many tears own the whole; that is so far as to my having the Lady in my power; and then the consequence is, that they all entreat me to let them see her (that is, singly, for such chaps always come alone;) when such is the pleasure of debauching virtue, that besides making me an handsome present for my kindness, they leave no temptation untried to prevail upon the Lady, whom they generally take to themselves upon a genteel settlement; by which means I have got a pretty sum, and have besides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known upon the town to do any thing in the public way; for this kind of customers have too great a regard for their characters, even to mix in company that might undeceive them! So you see, Doctor, that I do not forget your instructions of doing all the good in my power; and sure it is no small matter to rescue so many poor women, who were no longer capable of getting a genteel livelihood for themselves, from want and misery, and getting them a comfortable settlement for life, so that they have nothing to do now, but attend to you, and make their peace with Heaven.—Come! here's my service to you, my friend Momus; and if you can think of any story of me that can serve your turn, and get off another ballad, never spare me! I'll forgive you.'—'And so will I too (added the Doctor) though he should call me a worse name than Hunch-

Digitized by Google

Hunch-back. Let them laugh who win. While our railing at each other in public anſwers our own ends, we are fools to drop it, as to the deceit in it, it is a virtue; for ſure it is better to live thus in friendſhip and charity with all mankind, than to be the real enemies we ſeem; and ſo, Sir, here's my hearty ſervice to you. And let us purſue our works in concert, without any more of theſe broils. So let us drink about for an hour or two; for I muſt leave you early, being obliged to write an exhortation for the old ducheſs, which I muſt carry her early in the morning, when ſhe deſigns to viſit her couſin the colonel, who is under ſentence of death in Newgate for murder; not that I think either that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon him: but ſhe will try, and I do not care to diſoblige her, as ſhe is not only a good ſubſcriber upon all occaſions, but alſo a credit to our conventicle, which would never have riſen into ſuch eſteem with the people, if ſome perſons of quality had not brought it into faſhion.'—'Why aye! to be ſure there is a great deal in that (added the Matron;) faſhion is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, I could never do the buſineſs I do. But ſince the nobility have made it the faſhion to marry their miſtreſſes, there is no great difficulty in bringing a private gentleman's daughter into our way of life, as it gives her the only chance ſhe can poſſibly have of making her fortune, and becoming a Lady; for as to the example of thoſe few who married Ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too old faſhioned and romantic to have any influence. But that's true, Doctor, I forgot to mention ſomething to you laſt night that has given me great concern! How could you be ſo indiſcreet, as to accompany that highwayman to Tyburn the other day? And

then

Digitized by Google

then to take his hand and kiſs it before all the people. Fie! it turns my ſtomach to think of it! I do not know how you can expect any lady will let you ever kiſs her lips after ſuch a filthy action. Beſides, it is a ſcandal to all your congregation, that you ſhould appear ſo familiar with ſuch low-liv'd creatures, and ſeems a kind of encouragement to their crimes. If you had heard what remarks two or three Ladies, who called at my houſe yeſterday evening, made upon it, I am ſure you would never do it again.'—'Go to, woman! go to! (anſwered the Doctor, with a contemptuous look) take the beam out of thine own eye, before you find fault with the mote in your neighbour's! What highwayman's crimes are equal to yours. The greateſt danger of ſcandal that ever I ran, has been in condeſcending to keep company with you. In that indeed I may be ſaid, with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage the baſeſt crimes.'—

The Matron, who with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook ſuch an inſult as this, even from her ſpiritual guide, but catching up her glaſs in the madneſs of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, ſhe flung it at his head with all her ſtrength, and with ſuch an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground.—'Woman!' (ſputtered ſhe, as ſoon as her paſſion permitted her to articulate a word) 'Woman! Call your women about you! I ſcorn your words, you canting, hypocritical, vicious wretch, who, under the appearance of ſanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools that mind you: you condeſcend to keep me company! you! a creature who would never have been taken notice of, had it not been for me! Did I not point you out the perſons proper for

Digitized by Google

for you to work upon! Was it not I that introduced you to those very people of quality that now make you give yourself such airs? Were they not most of them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make you know yourself, you scoundrel! I will. I'll expose you to the world, and then see who will go to your conventicle, or subscribe to your sham charities! I'll make you know how to treat your superiors for the future.'——

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury, Momus and my master raised the Doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be described. The glass had been thrown with such strength, that had not his skull been of a comfortable thickness, his labours would have been at an end; however, it had made such a gash on his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The sight of this terrified them all! The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away, my master ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while Momus supported the Doctor in his chair; but the first sight of the wound, convincing him that it was not dangerous, he resolved to improve the accident, to that diversion which was the great pursuit of his life.

'Good Heaven! (said he in a low voice, as if speaking to himself, and with all the appearance of distress) 'What will become of us all! We shall all be ruined, by this unfortunate affair, even if we escape the death which inevitably awaits the wretched Murderess.'—'O Sir! (said the Doctor, alarmed almost to despair), what do you think? Am I a dead man? Speak, I conjure you, give me some hopes!'—'Alas, my friend! I wish I could; but I must not flatter a man in your condition! If you have any concerns in this life to settle, delay

Digitized by Google

delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in your ſcull threatens immediate death. Heavens!' (ſtooping and pretending to look earneſtly) How his brain works!'—'O what ſhall I do! (exclaimed the terrified wretch) I cannot die! I am not fit to die! Oh! that I had followed ſome honeſt trade, and never taken to this of preaching! I might then have earned honeſt bread, as my forefathers did, and eſcaped this miſerable death, and the more horrid fate that awaits me! What ſhall I do? What will become of me? How can I pray even to that God, whom I have ſo often provoked by my hypocriſy and crimes.'—

My maſter by this time had wiped the wound, and ſeeing, though it bled ſo violently from the number of little veſſels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the ſcull, and therefore no danger in it, 'Be comforted, Sir, (ſaid he) you have time enough to prepare yourſelf for death! I'll inſure you from any danger this time!'—'How, my deareſt, beſt friend!' (ſaid the Doctor, catching his hand, and kiſſing it in extaſy,) 'Is my life ſafe? Is not the wound mortal?'—'Mortal! no! nor even dangerous; if the ſurgeons do not make it ſo! Give me leave to put a plaiſter to it, which I always have in readineſs in the houſe, in caſe of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel for their women in their liquor; and I'll engage that it ſhall give you no further trouble. Many a guinea have I got by it, for when any ſuch thing happens, I immediately ſlip on a full trim'd ſuit, a big wig, and a ſword, which a ſurgeon once pawned to me for a debt of two guineas; and up I go, do the job, take the fee, and come away as good a ſurgeon as the beſt; never fear, Sir, I'll enſure you from this ſcratch.'

The

Digitized by Google

The consolation which this news gave the Doctor, is not to be expressed! He hugged and kissed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himself, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cause of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a swoon. But Momus, who saw his sport with the Doctor thus cut short, soon brought her to herself; for taking a glass of brandy as if to hold to her nose, in the affected awkwardness of his hurry and confusion, he spilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper to try what that would do, he designedly neglected to blow it out, and so holding it to her nose, set the brandy he had spilled upon her face on fire. This instantly awoke her from her swoon! She shrieked out, when he, in the same affected confusion, flung the bason of bloody water, in which the Doctor's wound had been washed, full in her face. This indeed quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and disagreeable as that of my master or the Doctor; the consequence of which was, that the Doctor could not refrain from bursting out a laughing. 'Well, my friend, said he (taking her by the hand) it is but just that you should share in the effects of your own rashness. But let there be no more of it. We have both been in fault perhaps, and so let us only be more cautious for the future. What I have suffered was done by design, and had like to have been attended with dreadful consequences; yours is all accidental and trifling.'—

While the Doctor was thus piously making peace, my master was cleaning himself, and setting the room to rights. Momus assisted the Matron, to cram half a dozen napkins down her bosom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with so well-

Digitized by Google

cted an anxiety and care, that even ſhe was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her, to his confuſion; and being glad to get ſo well off an affair that might have ended ſo much worſe, ſhe complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and ſo all things were reſtored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wound, by a ready preſence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from ſome of Momus gang, who had attempted to aſſaſſinate him, in revenge of the contempt into which he had brought their maſter.

Matters being thus happily ſettled, the reſt of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a ſong in character, by each of the company, of which Momus's was the moſt humorous, my maſter's the groſſeſt, the Matrons the looſeſt, and the Doctor's the moſt daringly profane, perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this the company broke up, when the Doctor having occaſion for ſome money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my maſter, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then retired to bed to his barmaid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRYSAL *enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character.*

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the Exhortation which he was to carry to her Grace the next morning; not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself: his time was too precious to be employed so; the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other; as visiting his great proselytes, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them voluntarily; but still, to secure to himself every degree of religious merit, he kept a most laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in constant employment, whose works he passed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them against himself.

To this learned person, therefore, he went upon the present occasion; and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politics,

Digitized by Google

ties to a company of chairmen. he told him his buſineſs, and deſired him to ſet about it directly. 'Good good, Sir, (ſaid the author, this is a very unſeaſonable time to ſet me upon ſuch a work. From five this morning, till eleven at night, have I laboured inceſſantly; and now when I have juſt ſtepped out to take a little neceſſary refreſhment'—'Refreſhment! (anſwered my maſter) Tell me not of refreſhment, or any thing elſe! Either do my buſineſs, or ſay you will not! I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for leſs than I give you.'—That is impoſſible, (replied the author) if they are to live by it! I am ſure what you give me ſcarce keeps me from ſtarving!'—'Starving! (returned my maſter) ſo it appears indeed! when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and ſmell ſo ſtrong of ſpirituous liquors, that it is offenſive to ſobriety to ſtand near you. I wonder you are not aſhamed to be guilty of ſuch intemperance! it ill becomes a man of morality and religion.'—'Sir, Sir,' (interrupted the author, provoked beyond his patience) 'Have ſome regard to truth and reaſon, to what you ſay; and look at home before you accuſe me of intemperance! I laboured the whole day, without any other refreſhment, or ſuſtenance, than a mouthful of bread and cheeſe, and a draught of ſmall beer; and now have had only a quartern of gin, in a pint of warm porter, to waſh down half a pound of ſauſages, and you call this intemperance. If I may judge by appearances, you have not ſpent your evening on ſuch fare.'—'How I have ſpent my evening,' (returned my maſter, who in ſpite of himſelf felt the juſtice of the reproach) 'is nothing to the purpoſe! I am anſwerable for what I do! But this manner of talking ſignifies nothing; I muſt

Digitized by Google

have this Exhortation by eight in the morning: it will not take you up much time! You are sufficiently practised in the style: the matter is of little consequence! If you chuse to drink a glass of wine, here is half a crown, which I make you a present of! I would by no means have you stinted of any thing that is proper.'—'Sir, (answered the author)' I am much obliged to you! I will take care that it shall be ready at the time. You are sensible that I never think much of any labour to serve you. I have finished all the pamphlets you ordered about the ballad-singer's affair! Here they are: This is a letter from you to him that lays him flat; I have quoted half the fathers of the church against him!—These two are letters to you upon the subject, one as from a great lord, the other from a reverend divine, setting forth the great benefits of your ministry, and exposing the profaneness and immorality of his ballad.—This here is a silly vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the author from one of his ranting companions; and this last, is an address to the public against all those irreligious and profane amusements, of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a master-piece! You see it is as from myself, if you do not chuse to own it: though I do not know but it may have more weight with your enemies, if it appears as from another. So you see I have worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have done with Mr Momus, and his ballad.'—'Why aye! pretty well, I believe, (said my master)—But hold, I have a thought just come into my head: You must know that the parson of the parish has sent for that reprobate, that Momus, and ordered him to alter the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have several of the same notes, with the Psalm tunes. Now as this is known, what do you think of writing

Digitized by Google

writing a letter to me, as from the parſon, ſetting forth what he has done, and inſinuating that it was by the direction of the ſquire? this will clinch the affair! After ſuch an authority no one will dare to ſay a word in its behalf: beſide, it will have a good look to be taken notice of by ſuch people.'—'That is true (anſwered the author) it will ſo, and the parſon's notice ſhall not be thrown away; I'll do it to-morrow morning, as ſoon as I ſend you the Exhortation.'—'My maſter then wiſhed him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himſelf went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had ſcarce ſlept off his debauch, when he was called to chaunt his mattin ſong; after which he did not fail to diſplay the wound in his temple, the occaſion of which he promiſed to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raiſe a curioſity that ſhould gather his whole flock, to hear ſo extraordinary an affair, as he deſigned to propoſe a ſubſcription, when their paſſions ſhould be warmed by ſuch an horrid attempt upon their paſtor.

By the time he had finiſhed this firſt work of the day, the Exhortation was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfaſhionably early as it was for a perſon of her rank to be even up) dreſſed and waiting for him: 'Pleaſe your Grace (ſaid he) here is the Exhortation your Grace deſired of me; and I pray Heaven it may prove ſucceſsful! I am afraid I have made your Grace wait; but I came the moment I had finiſhed the firſt duties of the morning. If your Grace pleaſes I will do myſelf the honour to accompany your Grace: Perhaps my perſonal Exhortation and prayer may have more effect:

Digitized by Google

My ministry has often been blessed with astonishing success.' 'I am sensible of that, Doctor, (answered her Grace;) but this unhappy man is of such a strange temper, that I apprehend he might be guilty of some act of rashness, that might be dangerous to your person, if you were to go to him without his consent: and that I am much afraid I shall hardly obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, did I find him engaged at cards with his gaoler; and when I expostulated with him on the danger of trifling away his few remaining moments, in so idle a manner (for I was apprehensive of exasperating him, if I spoke with greater severity) he only smiled, and answered me with a passage out of some play.'---'Yes, please your Grace,' (replied my master with a lifted eye, and deep fetched groan) 'cards and plays are the bane of half the world: religion is quite neglected for them. The great work of reformation will never be completed, till they are utterly abolished. As your Grace does not think it meet that I should visit this unfortunate gentleman, in person, I am obedient to your Grace's pleasure, however I will offer up my prayers for him; and my spirit shall assist your Grace's pious endeavours! Not that I fear what man can do unto me: the angel of the Lord watcheth over me, or the stroke that made this wound, had given me rest from my labours.'

He then displayed the mark of mother Brimstone's rage, and told her Grace so moving and circumstantial a story of his having been way laid, and attacked by some of Momus's riotous companions, that she implicitly believed him, and sympathized in his sufferings. He then gave her the Exhortation, which she was to

Digitized by Google

so deliver to her unfortunate cousin; and seeing her uneasy at being obliged to wait till the bank should be open, to get money to distribute among the poor wretches in the prison, he accommodated her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace) just so much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor industrious family in great distress.

It was a great pleasure to me, that I changed my service upon this occasion, as I was heartily sick of my master; though from a view I took of his heart, I saw that I had not been witness to half the mystery of his iniquity.

My new mistress went directly to the prison, to her cousin, where she had a sufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity, among his unhappy fellow-prisoners while she waited for his rising, which was not till very late, as he had sat up the whole night before, at his beloved diversion of card-playing. When at length she got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble she had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He asked her if she had procured him a pardon, and when she answered in the negative, and assured him that all such hopes were vain; he then told her that he would dispense with the continuation of her visit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, scarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the Exhortation of my late master, which she with difficulty persuaded him to take, tho' from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My mistress, for I had the good fortune to remain

in

Digitized by Google

in her poſſeſſion, was ſo ſhocked at this inſenſibility, that ſhe went directly home, and fought relief from the ſolid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unfeigned prayer for the converſion of him, and every other object of the divine diſpleaſure; for tho' a miſguided fervency of devotion had made her, in ſome meaſure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late maſter, nothing could lead her from the pureſt paths of true piety and virtue; nor did ſhe ſuffer the extravagance of his pretended enthuſiaſm ſo far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by perſons of her ſex, and rank.

CHAP. XIII.

Hiſtory of a Lady of faſhion. Deſcription of a rout. CHRYSAL changes his ſervice for that of a Lady of enterprize. A bold ſtroke for a huſband.

SHE accordingly went that afternoon to the houſe of a lady of quality, where a great concourſe of the beſt company uſually aſſembled on ſet invitations, to ſpend the evening at the favourite amuſement of cards. The lady of the houſe was one of thoſe children of fortune, who riſe by the means that ruin thouſands. In her early youth ſhe had ſacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the looſe deſires of the nobleman ſhe was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaiſant blindneſs to his other amours, gained her ſuch an aſcendency, that in a fit of uncommon fondneſs he made her his wife. But the method he took to ſecure himſelf the eaſe and conveniencies he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaiſance

Digitized by Google

plaiſance were all feigned; and the neceſſity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, ſhe immediately aſſumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the uſual prerogatives of it, in as high a manner, as if ſhe had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated huſband ſoon ſaw his error; but it was too late to remedy it; he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he deſires, by ſubmitting to let her gratify her paſſion, for vain pomp and expenſive ceremony, under the parade of which ſhe ſtrives to hide her obſcure original, as ſhe attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue, by a moſt rigid profeſſion of religion. Thus, her routs are the moſt ſplendid and difficult of acceſs of any in the town, no perſon being invited but thoſe of the firſt rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and ſhe profeſſes herſelf a ſtrict follower of my late maſter, in his moſt extravagant opinions, where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impoſſible to convey any notion to you of ſuch a ſcene as this, to which my miſtreſs carried me, it is ſo different from that ſphere in which you have acted. Suppoſe you ſee ſeveral hundred people of both ſexes, and of every age, dreſſed in all the profuſion and elegance of expence, and wearing diſſipation and happineſs in their looks, aſſembled together, to ſpend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverſe, and you ſhall behold a ſet of people who have ſacrificed their real intereſt and the peace of their minds, to the gratification of this, and ſuch like pleaſures, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly the whole is one

continued

Digitized by Google

continued scene of sharping, mutual distrust, envy, slander, and malevolence; the very few, who like my mistress came there for mere amusement, and are untainted with such vices, being forced to submit in seeming acquiescence, to the torrent they are not able to stem.

In the course of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my service; but as the stay I made with my momentary possessors was so very short, I shall wave giving any account of them. (especially as the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest, who launch out of the common road of life, are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment) and hasten to the lady, in whose possession I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who in the decline of life had overlooked the disparity of age and rank, and married her solely to gratify his passion for beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiscretion within bounds, but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the fashionable follies of the times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But though she eagerly followed every pursuit that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank into which her husband had lifted her, placed her upon a level, in point of society, with the best company; and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours

she

Digitized by Google

she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.

She had formed a variety of schemes to obtain this desired object, but still without success. At length, the very night I came into her possession, an accident suggested one to her, which she immediately put in execution, with the most sanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the first rank in the company, the weakness of whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a person, to whose fidelity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after the nobleman happening to fix his eye, with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought darted into her mind, that if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She lost deal! She revoked! She missed reckoning her honours! In short she was so absent, that she was obliged to pretend a violent head-ach, and leave the company. As soon as she got home she went to bed, where she spent the night in forming numberless projects for accomplishing her design; but still, the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the person to whose care the nobleman was entrusted, disconcerted them all. At length, she resolved to attempt corrupting

Digitized by Google

ing his fidelity, as she could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However not to be too rash, nor betray her design before she had some prospect of success, she resolved to sound the person, before she applied directly to him.

Accordingly, as soon as she got up, she wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a person had a certain affair to propose to him, for his concurrence, in which he should receive immediately a thousand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a-year, beside several other considerable advantages; and that what he was desired to do could be effected without any possible loss or danger to himself. This letter she sent by the penny post, and desired the answer might be returned in the same manner, under a feigned direction, to the house of a person in whom she confided.

Such a letter necessarily surprised the gentleman to whom it was sent. Though the greatness of the offer convinced him that some extraordinary piece of villainy was designed, yet, as he knew himself above temptation, he resolved to humour the scheme, till he should discover the whole of it, for the honest revenge of punishing a base attempt to seduce him into dishonesty. Accordingly he answered the letter directly, in such terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expressing his readiness to embrace any proposal that should be so advantageous, when he should be satisfied that the person who made it was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This

Digitized by Google

This bait took as he desired. My mistress, whose eager imagination was too full of the desired object, to let her use any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which she signed her name, and in it explained her whole scheme of marrying the nobleman, by his assistance; enforcing her former offer, by a promise of continuing him in the agency of the estate, or rather indeed of sharing it with him, and desiring to meet him that evening either at her house, or any other place he pleased, to confer upon proper means for bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loss how to act on such an occasion; he immediately waited upon the nobleman, who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and shewing both the letters, desired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was struck with horror at a piece of villainy that did such dishonour to the sex, respect for the memory of the worthy man, whose name she bore, would not permit him to expose her to public insult; however, to prevent her making the like attempt elsewhere, he resolved to shock her by a personal detection; accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be seen going to her house, but that if she pleased he would meet her at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where she should enquire for him by the name of Mr Trueman. Such a prospect of immediate success made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and accordingly she prepared to attend the appointment, with the most sanguine expectation.

But his lordship had prepared a reception for her,

Digitized by Google

which she never suspected. A little before the time, he went to the tavern with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a closet, large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word that if any lady should enquire for Mr Trueman, she should be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate shewing her up into the room, and placing her so, that every word she said might be heard in the closet, he entered into conversation with her on the subject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole proposal, and by starting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As soon as his lordship thought she had said enough, he issued from his concealment, and looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care she was taking to preserve the noble family of his relation, which she had whimsically given as one of the reasons of her desiring this marriage. It is impossible to describe her situation at the sight of this nobleman, whom she well knew, as well as his interest in defeating her design. Astonishment, shame, and confusion struck her motionless and dumb. She was just able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a swoon upon the floor. Such distress naturally softened the resentment of the generous nobleman, to whom she had designed such an injury: he assisted to raise her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herself, instead of aggravating her distress by reproaches, mildly advised her to desist from such unjustifiable schemes, and promised her that he would take

Digitized by Google

take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited such tenderness.

This treatment had the wished effect. That false spirit which would have borne her up against any severity, sunk before such unexpected delicacy and compassion. She melted into a flood of tears; and unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees and kissed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expressed; who immediately raised her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined it must be disagreeable to her to stay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himself, with the utmost politeness and respect.

Her situation, when she got home, was truly pitiable. The assurance of her late hopes doubled the distress of her disappointment, and the fear of shame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She cursed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithless man; and in the agony of her grief resolved to leave this detested town next morning, and bury herself for ever from the world, in her country seat.

This resolution she held till next morning, when she actually set out for the country; but I have reason to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently seen her since, in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman, to pay the ferrier who took care of her horses; but he thought it more necessary to give me in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beer-house, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him against a prosecution for entertaining a gang of street-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the course of business, to a knight of the post, whose evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conscientious

Digitized by Google

ſcientious perſon, as he was on his way to a country aſſizes, where the lives of many depended on his good nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who loſt me that evening to a nobleman at an horſe race.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL, by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of induſtry, who brings him to an horſe-race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jocky practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences.

IN the three or four laſt changes of my ſervice there was nothing remarkable. The progreſſion was natural, and the events common: but I muſt own I was a good deal ſurpriſed at ſeveral occurrences in my preſent ſtation, which were in the preſent courſe of things ſo ſtrange and unaccountable, that the moſt whimſical devil could never have thought of them without information.

The gentleman who had acquired me ſo eaſily on the road, and brought me to the meeting, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his ſkill in the myſterious ſcience of chance, ſupported by a good ſtock of aſſurance and perſonal courage, had come over to make his fortune; in which deſign he had really ſo far ſucceeded, that he had lived for ſeveral years in the higheſt life, and maintained the appearance of the eſtate he talked of in his own country, by the ſole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one reſource; but when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always ready to re-

Digitized by Google

dreſs

dress the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his possession.

The roads had been bad that morning, which kept him a little latter than usual, so that company were at the post when he joined them. By their noise and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a crowd of their own servants; their dress being exactly the undress uniform of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the same vehemence, and in the like style of oaths and imprecations, with which those gentry receive them at the door of a play-house, or palace; so that I scarce knew how to believe my senses, when I recognized the faces of several persons of the most elevated stations, and particularly, most of those among whom I had spent the evening I described to you at the club, on my first coming to this part of the world.

As soon as the betts were made, and the noise began to subside a little, my master pressed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the post, just as they were preparing to start, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord;' (said he) 'Well, Jack, (replied the other) where have you been all day?' This was all the discourse they had time for, the horses going off that moment: but on the strength of this my master backed his lordship deeply.

It is impossible to describe to you, who have never seen any thing of the kind, a scene of such confusion as the field was during the running; the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving against each other, without any respect to rank, or regard to safety, and roaring out their betts, and shouting for joy, at every vicissitude in the running.

Digitized by Google

At length the heat was ended, but so contrary to my master's expectation that he lost, to a noble duke who was in the secret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large sum besides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a severe stroke. He rode directly up to the post, and addressing the same groom, just as he came out of the scales; ''Sblood, my lord, (said he) how could you fling me so. I am quite broken up: his Grace has touched me for 500 l and the devil of the thing is, that I have been so torn down by a bad run of late, that I am quite out of cash, and have not a shilling to pay him'—'How could this be, (replied the groom) did I not give you the word? but you are such a careless son of a bitch.'—'The word with a vengeance, answered my master; you returned me well, but I have found it very ill.'—'Aye, I guessed it was so, (replied the groom) you were ignorant that we were smoaked, and found it necessary to change the lay. Where the devil were you all this morning? taking a ride I suppose; you will never leave off, till these rides bring you to ride in a cart to Tyburn; but keep out of his Grace's way till the horses start, and we will bring you home, I will engage. He thinks he has all the secret, but he is mistaken this bout, and shall pay for his entrance before we admit him to be one of us.'—'This discourse passed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to rub and settle next heat.

You are surprised at this familiarity, between my master and the groom. When he at first addressed him by the title of, My lord; I own I thought it no more than a cant, which in the freedom of this intercourse where

Digitized by Google

where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my aſtoniſhment at a nearer view, to ſee that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudible ambition of excelling in every the meaneſt art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding againſt him, to take the place of their ſervants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condeſcenſion, the moſt abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their anceſtors. Strange ambition, at a time when the intereſt and glory of their country called for their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as the noble groom and my maſter were alone; 'Now, Jack, what think you of my little ſtunorſe? (ſays his lordſhip.) You muſt know that I have meaſured the foot of them all in this heat, and find that I have the heels, by a diſtance at leaſt; but the weights are above my trim. However we have a remedy for that; look at this cap (taking one out of a cheſt, in which his running dreſs had been brought to the ground,) this is a leaden ſkull, and weighs above two ſtone; put this on your head, the thickneſs of your own ſkull will prevent its giving you the headach: aye, it fits you very well. Now I will wear this to the poſt, and juſt before we ſtart, complain that my cap is too wide, and borrow yours to ride in, and then I will alight at the ſcales, after the heat is over; I will pull off yours as if to wipe my face, and give it to you to hold, who can return me this to weigh in; and as I wear the ſame truſſes, ſtuffed with handkerchiefs, in which I carried the weight laſt heat, they never will ſuſpect us.—Ha, Jack, what ſay you to this! match me this among all your Hibernian tricks if you can. Go your

Digitized by Google

your way double with his Grace, and lay all you can. I'll go with you; but be sure to meet me at the post before, and at the scales after the heat, and not to blow the business by being in too great a hurry.'

I see you wonder how his lordship could put such confidence in my master, as he seemed to know him so well; but the truth was, my master's character for courage was so well established, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at least, if not unsuspected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried; and this made the other think him the safest person to entrust with the execution of such a scheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to his lordship.—The finesse succeeded; his lordship beat every tail hollow; and my master not only cleared with his Grace, but also won considerably for himself and his confederate beside. Things were carried on in the same genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vast concourse of the best company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the sport very fine, and so fair that the knowing ones were all taken in; and to make the pleasure complete, though the crowd was so great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was borne down in the croffing, by the superior strength of a servant who rode against him, and slipped his shoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horse's falling in the running.

It was on a sporting bett, on one of the bye-matches, that I was lost that evening, to the nobleman, as I said, in whose possession I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new master's

return

Digitized by Google

return to London, he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country seats.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAL *comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs.*

SOME public occasion had brought a concourse, more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late; on which, with an easy air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that 'He had been detained by very whimsical affair: a certain nobleman (said he) went into company last night, so immensely drunk, that having set in to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite forgot it this morning, and refused to pay the money, till some person of honour, who was unconcerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost it fairly, on which it was referred to me, and sorry I am that I was qualified to give it against him.'—'How, my lord, by being a person of honour!' says the gentleman he spoke to—'No (replied my master, with a significant smile) not so neither, but by being unconcerned in winning it.'—And then turning short to another, But have you heard the news, my lord? said he 'Mr— caught his

Digitized by Google

his wife yesterday taking a serious walk in Kensington gardens, with the gentleman whom we all know to be forbid her keeping company with, some time ago.—A smile of general approbation encouraged him so much, that he concluded with saying, 'he wished he had himself been the happy delinquent so taken, as he doubted not but the gravest bishop on the bench would, were he to speak his mind honestly.'

The prince had heard him without interruption; but as soon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who stood near him, 'There can be no greater insult (said he, with a determined look and solemn accent) to a person who is appointed to put the laws of a country in execution, than for any one to boast of a breach of those, in his presence. For my part, if I am ever called by Providence to that station, it is my invariable resolution, that no man, how exalted soever in rank, who lives in open violation of any law, human or divine, shall ever hold employment under me, or receive countenance from me.'

This rebuke damped my master's spirits, as it struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abashed. But he soon recovered, and to silence the jests of his companions, and shew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to spend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was sent, in the change of a note, to the first minister of state.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politics,

Digitized by Google

litics, made me enter into this ſervice with reluctance; but my prejudice was ſoon removed. My new maſter was juſt coming from his cloſet when I was delivered to him; he ſtopped to count the money, then putting it into his purſe, and turning to a clerk who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand,—'I muſt have all theſe finiſhed againſt morning, (ſaid he) that I may be able to read them over, before they are ſigned. I know they are a great many, but the buſineſs requires diſpatch; and diligence and method overcome the greateſt difficulties.'—Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with ſeveral of the moſt eminent members of the community, who came ſome to conſult, ſome to adviſe, (for he refuſed not the advice of the meaneſt) and all to congratulate him on the ſucceſs of his meaſures.—When the buſineſs and formality of this ſcene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who deſired ſome private converſation with my maſter. As ſoon as they were alone, 'I have done myſelf the honour to wait upon you this morning (ſaid the gentleman) to inform you that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know whom you would have me return, for as I ſee that all your meaſures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am determined to ſupport you.'

'I am much obliged to you for your good opinion, (anſwered my maſter) but I am reſolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any perſon, by any other means than reaſon: all therefore that I have to aſk is, that you will return an honeſt man. While he approves of my conduct he will certainly ſupport me, and no longer do I wiſh to be ſupported.'

'What,

Digitized by Google

'What, Sir! (replied the gentleman in astonishment) not desire to have your friends returned! Why, Sir! is it possible that you can be a stranger to the intrigues that are forming against you by a faction, who, when they had reduced the state to a mere wreck, like a cowardly mutinous crew, flew in the face of their master, took the boat and made their escape to shore; and now, when you have not only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted her out for another voyage, with every prospect of success, are caballing to undermine and turn you away from the helm: not that they even pretend to arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they may have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. As this, Sir, is notoriously the case, you must excuse the warmth of my honest zeal, when I tell you, that I think you must be guilty of very strange, very blameable remissness, if you neglect any possible method of disappointing their pernicious designs.'

'My friend, (returned my master) I am too sensible of the truth of all you say, but hope there is no necessity of my having recourse to methods which my soul disapproves. Without the assistance of any such, did I (to pursue your mode of speech) first point out to our master, and the rest of the ship's company the errors in their steering, the rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way to avoid them. Without any such, did I take the helm in that dangerous time, when they fled from the wreck, and work'd her out of the breakers they left her among; and without any such, will I support my place at the helm, or resign it; for in my opinion no end can justify improper means.'

'Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer gives me pain. Do not mistake me; I am sincerely obliged

to

Digitized by Google

to you for that good opinion which dictated it to your honeſt heart; but the truth is, that any member of the community's having the power of making ſuch an offer, proves ſuch a degeneracy in our conſtitution, as threatens its overthrow in the end. A parliament ſhould be a repreſentative of the people; but how can it be ſaid to be that, if the people are not at liberty to chuſe whom they pleaſe to repreſent them? beſide, ſuch a manner of nominating diſappoints the end, as well as it deſtroys the eſſence of a parliament, as it is too probable that the nominator ſhall ſtipulate conditions with his member, that may not only take away his power of voting according to the dictates of his judgment and conſcience, but alſo enjoin ſuch as may be directly oppoſite to both, and injurious, if not deſtructive, to that country which he thus nominally repreſents. A parliament therefore to be free ſhould be freely choſen, no man having it in his power to do more than give his own vote; and ſuch a parliament, to keep up to the excellence of its nature in its firſt inſtitution, ſhould not continue longer than one ſeſſion; but a new one be called as often as the occaſions of the ſtate ſhould require it, once in every year at leaſt, for ſo often does the intereſt of a nation demand that its guardians ſhould meet. Such a parliament, ſenſible of the ſhortneſs of its duration, and nature of the tenure of their power, would take care never to act againſt the intereſt of their conſtituents; or if human frailty ſhould err, their time would be too ſhort to eſtabliſh the evil, and as it would be impoſſible for them to be choſen again, the next parliament would remedy the miſchief—Such ſhould a Britiſh parliament be! ſuch I hope it will be! It is every honeſt Briton's duty to do ſo; nor ſhall any act of mine ever ſeem to

Digitized by Google

countenance a practice that contradicts this principle. By speaking and acting in strict conformity to the dictates of my judgment and conscience, have I hitherto succeeded, contrary to the apprehensions of many, beyond the expectations of all; and the same means, and none other, will I ever pursue.'—'Heaven bless your pious intentions;' (said the gentleman, taking his hand and kissing it in a rapture, tears of joy running down his face) 'heaven will bless them: happy sovereign in such a servant; happy Britain in such a guardian.'—Saying this he took his leave of my master, who went directly to wait upon his.

CHAP. XVI.

Chrysal's sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. Chrysal enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.

THE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but we see through all disguise, and read the real character in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened the royal in his breast.—'Sire, (said my master, addressing him, with the most respectful sincerity) here are the dispatches which you ordered me to

Digitized by Google

to draw up yesterday: since I had the honour of your commands then, I have received some farther intelligence, that confirms the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, but not deterred by the repulse which they justly met with from you, those people have the confidence to make a new attempt, and think to obtain by menaces what was refused to their intreaties; but the event will convince them, that it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny the suppliant, than repulse the insolent. Strong in the natural strength of your dominions, and stronger in the love of your people, you are able to assert your own cause against all the powers of the world, on that element which nature has pointed out for the scene of your triumphs; nor will you permit any other to interfere with you on it. All you require is a neutrality, where you are entitled to assistance: This shews your confidence in your own strength, and your contempt of them. But even this contempt will not overlook any disrespect to yourself, any partiality to your enemies. Let them either behave themselves as friends, or profess themselves foes.—This choice is indifferent to you. As to their complaints, their own unjust actions are the cause of them, and when this is removed, they will cease of course. Till then to seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist in the crime, is an insult upon justice and mercy; and for their menaces, they are beneath the notice of an answer.'

'Be it so, (replied the reverend Monarch, the indignation of his honest heart bursting from his eyes) be it so; you speak the sentiments of my soul.'—Then turning to a favourite subject who stood near him,—'It is a pleasure to me to transact business with this man,

Digitized by Google

(continued he;) he makes me understand him, and does not perplex my soul with a vain maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with open honesty and boldness.'—The honour of this testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the assiduity of his soul. As soon as he went home, he found a person waiting for him, whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest importance.—'I have sent for you, my friend, (said my master, on an occasion which, I am sensible, will give joy to your heart. You are to command a separate body of troops, which have been sent to prosecute this necessary and just war in America. I need not put myself, nor you, to the pain of repeating the causes of the shameful inactivity, to give it no severer name, by which this war has been drawn into such a length; you know, and will avoid them. You will not wear out opportunity, in making unnecessary preparations for improbable occasions: you will not damp the ardour of your soldiers by delay, nor prolong a burthensome war to enrich yourself with the spoils of your country. You are young, active, and brave: such a commander only do British soldiers want, to lead them to victory. You have no senior, no superior here, to restrain the efforts of your spirit, by timid caution; at the same time, that your judgment will supply the place of experience, and prevent your falling into the misfortunes, which self sufficient brutal rashness has made so fatal to others. Your instructions are comprized in a few words,—make the best use your judgment shall direct you, of the forces entrusted to your command, to defend the property, and avenge the wrongs of your fellow subjects; and to vindicate the honour of this abused nation.—I know

Digitized by Google

know whom I speak to, and therefore I say no more: proceed, my friend, my soldier, answer my expectations, and you will fulfil the wishes of your country'.—Saying thus he embraced him tenderly, and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the street, he saw a number of disabled soldiers, who had placed themselves before his window, to solicit relief for their miseries.—'O, my friend! (continued he, grasping his hand) behold those victims of the unjust ambition of that enemy against whom you go; and let the sight add the wings of an eagle to your haste, to tear down a power, which has been thus fatal to so many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from suffering the like evils, from the same cause.' The man who does not use to the best advantage the means entrusted to him by his country, to destroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils which those enemies may afterwards do to his country.'—'Shall I beg a favour of my friend? distribute this money, (giving him an handful of guineas) among those men, as from yourself. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the residue in your hands, to apply to the same use on the first occasion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to excess. The invidiousness of my station makes it improper for me to do even an act of virtue, which may be mistaken for ostentation. Adieu, my friend, heaven guard you in the day of battle, and guide your sword to victory.

I here quitted the service of this great man, the instances of whose conduct, which I have given, make any farther character of him unnecessary.

The regard with which the minister had addressed

Digitized by Google

himself to my present master, raised my curiosity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but I might leave his possession directly: but my fears were agreeably disappointed; for the number of guineas given to him by master, exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be distributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entrusted to him, warmed his heart with the most exalted joy. He executed his charitable commission, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mother, and kissing her hand in rapture; O, 'madam, (said he) congratulate your happy son: My prayers at length are heard, and I am blessed with an opportunity of proving to the world, my attachment to the service, my ardour for the glory of my country: I am honoured with a separate command in America, where heaven fires my soul with an assurance, that I shall have the happiness of crushing the injurious power of our enemies, in the very place where it first attacked my country; where it has too long triumphed in its wrongs.'

'Heaven bless my son,' (replied the matron, as soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak) 'heaven guard my son, and bless his pious hopes. Let me only live to see him return with the honour of having done his duty, and I shall die contented. But why do I say this, as if my heart felt a doubt for him? my son will never fail to do his duty, he will never fall from the paths of honour, however dangerous, nor seek to colour over with specious arguments the loss of his honour. He will not make his mother ashamed of having born him, nor bring her grey

Digitized by Google

grey hairs with disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the instructions which have formed his youth, I know the principles of his heart, I know my own blood better.——But, O my son! remember also, that prudence distinguishes true courage from rashness: that your country has now a peculiar interest in your life, and that you betray its trust, if you lose it by any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged mother, who hangs weeping over her grave, till you return. Remember your ——.'

'O, my mother! no more recal not ideas, which my present situation requires me to forget. Fear not, your son will not be a disgrace to the honest race from which he is sprung. He will do his duty as a soldier, a British soldier, and as a man, sensible of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand again, is only known to heaven; but it is in my power to promise, that the name of your son shall never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his actions require the palliation of excuse from his friends. If life is to be short, let it be well filled: one day of glory is better than an age of idleness or dishonour. Adieu, my mother; your blessing is a shield to the head, a support to the soul of your son; one tender parting more, and then my heart must be resigned to other cares.'——'Heaven bless! heaven guard my son!' and then, as he went from her, 'O glory! what a tribute dost thou exact from wretched mortals!'

My master paused a moment to wipe away the pious tear, which filial duty owed to a such parting, and then hasted to another scene of equal tenderness.

Mutual merit had improved the instinctive liking of youth,

Digitized by Google

youth, between my master and a young lady, whose elevated rank and large fortune were her least recommendations, into the strongest attachment of real love. As reason could make no objection on either side, parental approbation gave its sanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to seal their bliss. Hard task upon a favourite lover, to communicate to the chosen of his soul the order which was to damp rising expectation, by this delay; and tear him from the instant hope of that happiness which he had so long been suing for. But honour, and the service of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his soul aspired.

CHAP. XVII.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned romantic style. CHRYSAL *quits the service of the general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.*

AS soon as he had recovered from the softness into which his mother's tenderness had melted him, he went directly to his mistress. She received him with the freedom proper in their present situation, but soon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that shewed her his heart was not at ease. This alarmed her tender fears; 'What (said she, looking earnestly at him) can make a troubled gloom overcast that face, where hope and happiness have, for some time, brightened

Digitized by Google

ened every ſmile. Can any thing have happened to diſturb the proſpect ſo pleaſing to us! Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy, or unable to ſhare with you! it muſt be ſo; that faint, that laboured ſmile, betrays the ſickneſs of your heart.'

'O deareſt wiſh of that heart, (replied he, taking her hand, and kiſſing it in ecſtaſy) how ſhall I merit ſuch perfection! It is impoſſible: I am unworthy: but let my ſoul thank heaven for bleſſing it, with this opportunity of riſing nearer to a level with your virtues; an hope that will ſoften the ſeverity of abſence, and make the delay of happineſs ſeem ſhorter.'

'What canſt thou mean?' (ſaid ſhe, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy) —'Delay! I underſtand thee not——I urge not.'——'Miſtake not, O my love, the inconſiſtencies which anguiſh extorts from my bleeding heart——How can I ſay it!——Our happineſs is delayed,——delayed but to be more exalted——Honour, the ſervice of my country calls.'—'And am I to be left?'—'But for a time, a little time, the pain of which ſhall be overpaid by the joy of meeting, never to part again.——O ſpare my heart, reſtrain thoſe tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to ſuch a trial——The intereſt, the glory of my country demand my ſervice, and my gracious maſter has honoured me with a ſtation, in which my endeavours may be effectual, to accompliſh his commands——nay, muſt be effectual, where love urges duty, where you are the ineſtimable reward?'—'If that reward is all you ſeek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is amply ſufficient! Quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire, and ſeek true happineſs in content.'——'O ſpare my ſtruggling heart: what can I, ſhall I do?—The trial is too great

Digitized by Google

great for human fortitude! Affiſt me glory! help, O my country! ſupport me through this conflict, and I ſhall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deſerve thee.'—'Go! go! and heaven guide and guard your ſteps!' (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears) 'I ſhall no longer ſtruggle with the ſacred impulſe, that leads you on to glory.'—Then turning to him, 'But remember how you leave me! Think what I feel till you return!—What I muſt be, ſhould'.—The horror of this thought made her unable to ſay more, he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with hers, as her head reclined upon his boſom, in the tenderneſs of a chaſte embrace. 'This is too much; (ſaid he) this is too much!—I can never repay this exceſs of goodneſs.'—Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthuſiaſm—'Heaven gives my ſoul (continued he) this foretaſte of happineſs, as an earneſt of ſucceſs: I go to certain victory: the prayers of angels muſt prevail.'—Saying theſe words, he ruſhed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier ſtate; the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his reſolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears, to ſuch a ſacrifice.

But glory and the intereſt of his country ſoon diſſipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of ſuch painful ſcenes of tenderneſs, reſumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking, with the moſt indefatigable aſſiduity. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee the effects of theſe cares; ſuch objects as I was deſigned for, occurred too frequently, to the firſt of whom it fell to my lot

Digitized by Google

lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly eſtabliſhed, on the principles of virtue, than there. To ſelect any one inſtance would be injuſtice to the reſt. All was uniformly great and good.

My next maſter was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the ſcalp of his head, to raiſe the trophies of the French in America. Though he was deſtitute of almoſt every comfort which nature really ſtands in need of, his firſt care, on the acquiſition of ſuch a treaſure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-ſhop, where he changed me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taſte of which was too pleaſing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be ſatisfied with ſo little. Quartern followed quartern, till every ſenſe was intoxicated, and he fell dead drunk on the floor, when his good-natured hoſt had him kindly laid, to ſleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill; firſt taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the ſtreets from robbing him of the reſt of his treaſure, by picking his pocket of it himſelf.---The ſcenes I ſaw in this ſervice, were all of the ſame kind, but I was ſoon relieved from the pain of them, my maſter giving me, as a preſent, to an officer of the cuſtoms, that very night.---By this faithful ſteward of the public, I was next morning given by the factor to a gang of ſmugglers, to be laid out for him in Flanders lace, whither he was juſt going on the affairs of his profeſſion. With this induſtrious trader I went as far as Harwich, where, while they waited for the tide, he loſt me at a game of cribbage, to a perſon who was going over with him.

My

Digitized by Google

My new master was honest Aminadab, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. 'I wish (said the father) that we were safe at our journey's end; for though I have planned matters so well, that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious.'—'I do not understand you, (replied the son) I thought this was but such a journey as I have often known you to take, and that you were going no farther than Holland, on some business of her Grace's.'—'She thinks so indeed, (returned the father) nor would I have her think otherwise as yet; but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my son, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth beyond my most sanguine hopes. For you must know, that having gained the confidence of this woman by many services, I at length suggested it to her, that the best way for her to make the most profit of the great wealth she has amassed would be to send it to Holland, by some trusty person, who should bring it over again from thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies given for the defence of Germany; now that hers, and the intrigues of some other great persons, had baffled the schemes of economy, which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms.—She took the hint, for it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I should negociate the affair for her; giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.

Digitized by Google

'This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my money, as fast as I could make any, into Holland, that I might be able to seize such an happy opportunity as this at a moment's warning.'——'But you cannot think, father, of staying in Holland. You will be immediately pursued thither.'——'In Holland fool! no, nor in the smoke of Europe at all! I design to set out for Africa, without a moment's loss; and hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that of any Christian power, before she can suspect any thing of my flight. And it will heighten the pleasure of my success, to think, that while I am sailing to a land of circumcision; she will sit in anxious expectation of my return.'

'But father, is not it injustice to deceive her confidence, and rob her of so great a sum of money?'

'Injustice, fool! injustice to a christian! Say such another word and I discard you, disclaim you for ever! thy converse with these Gentiles has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with them; what do we serve them; what do we bear their abominations, their insults for, but to make our own advantage of them? Fools! vain presumptuous fools! to imagine that any benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them; or change the innate hatred of our souls, to a sect that has been the cause of our dispersion and ruin. But, to silence thy weak scruples about injustice with a word, have I not the authority of our holy Scripture, the example of our great prophet Moses himself, for what I do, who borrowed the wealth of the Egyptians without a design of ever returning them, to pay the children of Israel for the labours they had been put to by their oppressors, and enrich them when they should arrive at

Digitized by Google

the land of promiſe?—And is not this my caſe? have I not laboured hourly for this Gentile woman without payment! Did ſhe not join to defraud our people of a greater ſum than this, to which my mite was added too, under the pretence of procuring us a ſettlement! and did ſhe not refuſe to return it, when the attempt failed of ſucceſs. What then is this, but a juſt retaliation? a fulfilling of our law, that ſays, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth? And I do not want her wealth to make my ſettlement happy, in the land of my fore-fathers?" —The ſon had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments ſo concluſive. By this time the wind and tide ſerved for us; we arrived in Holland without any thing remarkable, except I ſhould take notice to you of the ſordid hypocriſy of my maſter as ſuch, who, not to violate the cuſtoms of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his paſſage without expence.

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political converſation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great diſtreſs.*

AS ſoon as we arrived at the Hague, my maſter ſet his ſon to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himſelf, for a moment, to ſpeak to one of the principal members of the ſtates.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon buſineſs, 'My friend Aminadab,

Digitized by Google

Aminadab, (said his mightiness) I am glad to see you; I hope you have brought us good news; and that there is a stop put to the insolence of those English pirates, who in a manner block up our ports, and have almost ruined our trade.'

'Really, my friend Van Hogan, (replied my master) I am sorry that I cannot give you any satisfactory account of that affair. For such is the perverseness of the people in power there, at present, that they will not listen to any arguments.'——'Will they not take money?'——'No, indeed; nor does the boldest of us all know how to offer it with safety, it was rejected with such indignant rage the last time; though in truth the offer was a tempting one. I have seen the day, and that not very long since, when half that sum would have done twice as much. But matters are most strangely altered of late. They have got a manager, who neither drinks, nor games, keeps running horses, nor whores, nor lives above his private fortune, and therefore has not such pressing demands for money, as used to make our negociations go on so smoothly with others formerly.'

'Death what shall we do? Is the whole court corrupted by this example? are they all infected with such a strange madness?'

'No, it has not gone so far as that yet; and it is to be hoped, that the example of a few will not be able to do so much; and that when the novelty of his humour wears off a little, it will go out of fashion insensibly, and things return to their old course. This is supposing the worst, that the engines now at work to overturn this new set should miscarry.'

'But what must we do in the mean time? We shall

Digitized by Google

be ruined before that may happen! we muſt declare war, and do ourſelves juſtice.'

'But may not the remedy there be worſe than the diſeaſe? Are your affairs in ſuch a condition as to entitle you to take ſuch a ſtep? Conſider what a mighty naval force they have at this time: conſider how you will be able to reſiſt it.'

'That is the thing, the only thing that has kept us quiet ſo long! But ſomething muſt be done; another Amboyna affair, or ſome ſuch ſtroke, muſt bring us ſatisfaction, and revenge too.'

'Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: this is no time for ſuch ſtrokes: nor are the preſent governors ſuch people as thoſe who ſuffered them ſo tamely: they will be apt to return the ſtroke, in a manner that may be attended with conſequences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate thoſe haughty Iſlanders as much as you; except ſome few particulars, the ſenſe of the whole nation has ever been againſt us; nor would they ſuffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourſelves ſo well of the favour of thoſe few, as to get the command of almoſt all the money in the kingdom into our own hands, ſo that now they dare not provoke us too far; though I own I do ſuſpect that the deſign of the preſent rulers, is to get out of our power as ſoon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their deſigns.'

'But all this time this talking ſignifies nothing to our affairs; what do they ſay to them? What reaſons do they give for encouraging theſe outrages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of juſtice?'

'In truth, my friend, a great many, that are more juſt than agreeable; more eaſily exclaimed againſt than refuted.

Digitized by Google

refuted. In answer to your alledging the faith of treaties, they insist that they strictly observe the sense and spirit of them, while you only cavil about the words, it being absurd to think that any nation should bind up its own hands, in the manner you pretend; or even if that was the meaning of the treaty, at the time when it was made, that your abuse of the indulgence given by it makes it necessary to retract it now: and they express the most indignant surprise at your insisting so strongly upon one article, which at best is but doubtful, and would be in itself absurd in the sense you wrest it to, while you break through so many, the meaning of which you do not pretend even to dispute.'

'Then we will dispute no longer about them; we will enforce their observation, by the same methods that originally obtained them.'—'Aye, if that could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you; I am afraid those means are out of your power; you were then really mighty states, respectable for your power, and dreadful for your valour; but the case is now altered, I need not say how.'

'Ingrateful ENGLISH! to forget how we rescued them from popery and slavery, but the other day; had it not been for us they would, at best, have been but slaves to FRANCE.'

'The very charge they make against you, who, they say, could never have resisted the power of Spain, or established your liberties, if their queen Elizabeth had not hearkened to the cries of your poor distressed states. As for the affair you mention, though they do not deny the benefit, they take off from the obligation, by attributing it to self interested motives; as they say you were convinced, that if any thing happened to them,

Digitized by Google

you muſt ſink of courſe: beſide, that you have been amply paid for this, by the immenſe expence of blood and treaſure with which they eſtabliſhed your barrier in the late wars, which they evidently entered into on your accounts, to the neglect of their own intereſt.

'In a word, my friend, there is ſo much truth in what they ſay, that I would not adviſe you to inſiſt upon theſe points any more.'—'Confound the points! and the memories that rip them up ſo! What ſhall we do? I myſelf loſt a ſhip laſt week, worth fifty thouſand ducats; though all the precautions poſſible were taken; as ſending her papers by another ſhip, ſupplying her with falſe bills of lading, falſe clearances, falſe conſignments; in ſhort, every thing that human heart could deviſe.'

'And I know ſhe was as well ſworn for to prevent her being condemned, as human conſcience could ſwear; but nothing could elude the captors, or deceive or influence the judges; but ſhe was not inſured?

'Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by inſuring, except the ſhips are to be caſt away: O my ſhip! my ſhip! I will have war.'—'And then all your ſhips go at once.'—'I am diſtracted, what ſhall we do?'

'My friend, the beſt, the only advice I can give you, is to put a ſtop to this trade, and open your eyes to your true intereſt. I hate the Engliſh as much as you poſſibly can; but that ſhould not make me ruin myſelf to be revenged on them: they are your only natural allies; they firſt delivered, they ſtill ſuſtain you; nor can you ſupport the very name of an independant ſtate without them. Provoke them not, therefore, too far; I wonder how they have borne ſo much already; preſerve a fair neutrality; they deſpiſe your aſſiſtance, and

Digitized by Google

and desire no more: nor by your avarice force them to measures that must end in your ruin. If you break with them, whom will you apply to? The French have given you many proofs, that they wait only for an opportunity to enslave you: Spain has at length learned its own interest, and will not break with the only power, whose friendship can be of real service to it: and this very war gives a sufficient demonstration of Austrian faith and gratitude.

'This is the obvious situation of things, and must strike a person at the first view: but a moment's thought will shew them, even in a stronger light. For to grant that France and Austria both may be sincere in their professions to you; does not reason shew you the imprudence of trusting to promises which it is more than probable they will not be able to perform. For if you will but divest yourself of passion and prejudice for a moment, you will see that the measures entered upon, and the means used to carry them on, by the English at this time, must, in all human appearance, disappoint the schemes of their enemies, and retort upon their own heads the ruin they meditated for others. Indeed the prospect is such, that it is impossible to say where things will end: every interior fund is exhausted; every external resource cut off; their own trade is absolutely ruined; the treasures of Spain, which supplied them in their last wars, are no longer at their command; so that I can foresee nothing less than their becoming bankrupts, not only to themselves, but also to every foreign state, and individual, whose avarice of present gain has made them supply their wants.

'Nor is this distress the effect of chance, or of an unfortunate

Digitized by Google

fortunate campaign, which the ſucceſs of another, or ſome lucky hit, may reſtore. It is the natural conſequence of a ſyſtem of meaſures, plann'd with judgment, and proſecuted with vigour, by a miniſter who will not fail to improve it to the moſt ſolid advantage. And this I ſay, not ſolely from my own opinion. You know I have had connections with perſons able to give me the beſt information, by the aſſiſtance of which I have traced the progreſs of theſe affairs with aſtoniſhment: and therefore, as England has thus at length ſhewn a ſuperiority in council, the uſual reſource of patching up a good peace, at the end of an unſucceſsful war, ſeems alſo to be precluded from them.

'As for the houſe of Auſtria, it has ever been a dead weight upon its friends, though its infatuated ingratitude to England, which had been in a manner its ſole ſupport for near a century, will probably prevent any other ſtate from undertaking ſuch a burthen, ſo that it muſt ſink back into its original obſcurity and barbariſm.

'Thus you ſee, my friend, that depending upon France is leaning on a broken reed, and truſting to Auſtria, going for ſhelter under a falling wall: what then can you do if the Engliſh ſhould take offence at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands to puniſh your avaricious partiality to their enemies?

'Your power is, in every inſtance, contemptible; your navy is gone abſolutely to decay; your land forces are filled with old men and children; your officers, who might have ſerved you, have been obliged to enter into other ſervices for bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, puſillanimous burghers, who barter their votes for ſuch a ſhare of the ſpoils of the public.

Your

Digitized by Google

Your finances are in the loweſt ſtate of embarraſſment; your public ſpirit, your valour, your virtue, all ſwallowed up by ſelfiſhneſs and ſordid love of gain; every thing in the ſituation that ſeems to invite ruin, if it is not ſpeedily prevented; and that can poſſibly be done no other way than as I have mentioned; for as I have ſaid, and muſt again repeat, things are now on a footing there, that do you not ſeem to be properly aware of. The people are ſenſible of their own ſtrength; their governors exert it properly, and there is a mutual confidence between them, that in a manner enſures ſucceſs to their attempts. Conſider this fair, this friendly repreſentation of real facts, and you will ſoon ſee the improbability of their bearing with you any longer; or ſuffering you to defeat the end of their military efforts, by carrying on the trade of their enemies, and ſo enabling them to continue the war.'

'Is it come to this? Are the friends on whom we depended moſt turned againſt us? Are you an advocate for our enemies, and would perſuade us to give up the moſt advantageous branch of trade we have?

'Why will you let your paſſion blind you thus? I have told you before, and repeat it again, that of all chriſtians I hate the Engliſh moſt, becauſe they reſemble us leaſt; as I love the Dutch moſt, as you come neareſt to ourſelves, both in practice and profeſſion. But my paſſions never blind me! and therefore I ſpeak the dictates of reaſon; I plead not for them, nor will I flatter you.'

'Notwithſtanding all their boaſted power, we have one ſtroke left to humble them; and we will make it directly; we will draw all our money out of their funds.

'Will you ſo? at a third part loſs? O, Moſes! what

Digitized by Google

what fools are thoſe chriſtians? Do you not ſee that even this ſtroke, as you call it, is guarded againſt? that, apprehenſive of ſuch an attempt, they have lowered the particular funds in which your money chiefly lies, ſo far, that the loſs of ſelling out now would be intolerable. And whoſe is this money which you would draw out? the property of private people: abſurd thought! if it was the money of the public, it would not be ſtrange to ſee it ſacrificed to private intereſt; but there is no inſtance in all your ſtory of private property being given up voluntarily for the redreſs of publie wrongs.

'Friend Hogan, I am in haſte; my affairs call me elſewhere; when I ſhall ſee you again is uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to miſs this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in London; nor would I have another amuſe you with hopes that muſt deceive you in the end: while it is in my power to ſerve you I did; I abuſed their confidence; I betrayed their ſecrets to you: but I can do it no longer; nor can any other to effect. Meaſures as well as men are changed.---Adieu.'

With theſe words my maſter went to ſeek his ſon, leaving his friend Van Hogan in the higheſt diſtraction, between the oppoſite impulſes of the ſtrongeſt paſſions that could agitate his ſoul, avarice and fear.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIX.

Aminadab bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for Africa. Chrysal *remains with a* Dutch *banker. The principles and conscience of a good* Dutchman. Chrysal *is sent into* Germany. *His opinion of the* Dutch.

THE young Israelite met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that Aminadab blessed the God of his fathers; and to complete the fulness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his Dutch friends, and in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not jewels of gold and jewels of silver, as much coined gold and silver as he could; and then going with his son to the sea-side, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of successful villainy.

But I went not with them; my British shape being of more value in Europe than where he was going, my master left me with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of Spain, which neighbourhood made better known there.—My Hebrew master had scarce left the banker, into whose hands he had given me, when in came his Belgic friend Van Hogan, all aghast at the news he had received from him, and something else which had come to his knowledge since.

'O, Mynheer! (said he) we are all blown up and undone! the flood is pouring in upon us.'—'What is the matter now, Mynheer, (replied the banker) that throws you into this strange consternation? the worms have

Digitized by Google

have not destroyed the dams? nor an earthquake swallowed up the Spice Islands?'

'Worse, worse if possible, than even these! Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient English have refused to release our ships that were taken carrying ammunition and provisions to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done, to divert this blow?'—Really, Mynheer, I cannot tell; the case is bad enough to be sure; but it is no more than was to be expected; it was not to be thought that they should always remain such passive fools as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessaries to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us.'

'Death! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus! but say what you will, my Province shall never bear it. Why I have received advice this minute, that our ships which were freighted for their enemies will be condemned; and that they are as little moved at our menaces as they were at our entreaties. If this continues, we shall not have a ship left in the Texel.'—'Nay, mine shall escape, I'm resolv'd.'——'What will you do to save 'em?—Not run them into the danger, Mynheer.'—'How! give up the trade?'—'Most certainly; since it cannot be carried on with safety any longer; and glad that I have come off so well.'——'I do not understand you!'—'You are too warm, Mynheer; too sanguine in the pursuit of your projects; while the surprise or fright of the late managers in England gave me reason to think that they would not venture to interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade, in this way, as any other: but as soon as I saw the people recover their

Digitized by Google

ſenſes, and the reins put into other hands, I made a timely retreat with what I had acquired.'—'And what do you intend to do now?'—'Keep fair with thoſe whom I can get nothing by breaking with, and throw my buſineſs into another channel; by which management I have already ſucceeded ſo far, that I have got the Britiſh remittances to the parties engaged in the preſent war.'—'Why, there may be ſomething in this; and if one ſcheme fails, I believe I will even follow your example.'—'And pray what is that, Mynheer?'—'No more than the old cry of piracy; but this is ſo laid, that it can hardly fail of ſucceſs; we have bribed the captain of an Engliſh privateer to rifle a ſhip, that we prepare properly for the purpoſe, and then to come into the way of one of our men of war, which is to take him and bring him in, where he is to inſult the government, and vindicate his outrages on the pretence of authority.'

'And pray, Mynheer, what can you propoſe from all this beſide having the fooliſh villain hanged?'

'Why the Engliſh, in deteſtation of ſuch villainy, will give up the point of ſearching our ſhips, when they ſee their authority abuſed in ſuch a manner, and we ſhall gain our end that way; or if they do not, our own people will be ſo enraged at the inſult and injuſtice (as they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will immediately declare war againſt them; and ſo we ſhall obtain it the other. The pirate, when he has ſerved our turn, we are to let eſcape; and it will be no great loſs to the world if half a ſcore of his crew are hanged.'

'A very juſt and public ſpirited ſcheme indeed! to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to commit,

Digitized by Google

and engage your country in a war that must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to an unjustifiable trade.

'Mynheer Van Hogan, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my interest, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when my interest is not destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you, I think your present scheme is, in which I will be no farther concerned, than to try to prevent the evil consequences of it to the state: the rest may lie upon your own head.

'Any thing in the way of trade, my conscience complies with without scruple; I can take every oath that every officer of the customs in Europe can impose, and not think myself bound by any of them, farther than they agree with my interest; I can supply the enemies of my country with arms, to fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray my taxes toward the support of the war; I can receive circumcision, stroak down my beard, and swear by Mahomet, to avoid a tax at Smyrna; I can trample on the cross, deny Christ, and call myself a Dutchman, to obtain leave to trade in Japan; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a rat at home.

'I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one of the German princes, whom England keeps in pay, to fight for their own preservation, from the same principles, that it has long fought our battles, and would again, if we did not provoke it too far. And when this is done, I am to meet the French ambassador to settle terms with him for remitting the money, that is to pay the army which fights against the allies of England. So that you see I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth,

Digitized by Google

warmth, unnatural to the cool temper of our country, will let you open your eyes to your true intereſt.'

Mynheer Van Hogan departed, rather ſilenced than ſatisfied with the reaſoning of my maſter, who ſat down to negociate the hire of a principality, with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnip field; and bought and ſold the inhabitants with as great indifference, as if he would have bargained for a caſk of herrings; in which ſervice, it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I muſt have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil and religious, of my late maſter, I muſt own, there was ſomething ſo groſly reprobate to every ſenſe of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleaſed to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general; where the very profeſſion of virtue was deſpiſed, their only pretenſion to it being the abſence of one vice, hypocriſy, which they rejected as an unneceſſary incumbrance, and acted their groſſeſt enormities, without reſerve or appearance of ſhame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the ſovereign actors give a dignity to the ſcenes; and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed and loſt, in the confuſion of nations.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudices and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions.

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory, in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went.

Such scenes as these cannot be made known by description to an inhabitant of this happy island, whose situation defends it from the sudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval strength does from the more deliberate devastations of regular invasion; and the excellency of its laws, from the yet severer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happiness, such is the insatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that not content with these blessings, you are ever complaining, ever grasping at more, till, in the end, you lose the enjoyment of what you possess; insensible that your severest wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been said, that there is a certain degree of madness requisite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its first principle of self-preservation, to slight the most terrifying dangers, and seek the most severe evils that interrupt its pursuit of an imaginary good.

The lust of power and the intoxication of glory may seem

Digitized by Google

ſeem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature, but madneſs alone can ſupport the maſs of mankind through it, who are inſenſible to theſe fantaſtic motives, or at leaſt cannot delude themſelves with the fainteſt hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I ſaw many inſtances in my journey through the countries, that were the ſcene of the preſent war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the Dutch travelling boats, early in our journey, made the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on me, and deſerves relation moſt.—There had been an obſtinate battle fought ſome time before, between the parties then at war, in which the loſs was ſo ſevere, and ſo equal on both ſides, that as ſoon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itſelf vanquiſhed, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's ſituation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to aſſert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the miſery of the unhappy wretches who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful ſcene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as ſoon as the firſt terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved ſome of the inhabitants to go and try to relieve as many of the deſerted ſufferers, as had not periſhed for want of more timely aſſiſtance, without diſtinction, or reſpect to any party.

Two of thoſe victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had ſince founded a friendſhip on their common calamity, having been ſupported by the ſame charity, and cured of their wounds

Digitized by Google

in the ſame bed, were now ſtriving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcaſes carried, like other worn out inſtruments of the war, to their reſpective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water ſide, where we had juſt taken boat, where they begged in the moſt moving terms to be admitted, but were abſolutely refuſed, till one of the paſſengers, an Engliſh gentleman, took compaſſion on their diſtreſs, and paid their fare.

We were all ſeated in the equality uſual in ſuch vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions are thrown promiſcuouſly together, when the converſation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in moſt parts of Europe, and every one ſpeaking variouſly, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the Engliſhman chanced to ſay, that he thought ſuch a combination of the greateſt powers of Europe, as at that time laboured to oppreſs the King of Bulgaria, was to diveſt it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politics to the rule of reaſon and juſtice, the moſt injurious, and even baſe abuſe of power, that could be inſtanced in the chriſtian hiſtory; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his ſubjects to his cauſe, that is, really to their own cauſe, would riſe ſuperior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the ſtroke which they had perfidiouſly aimed at his ruin, to their diſhonour and confuſion.

The rage into which this reflection, ſo injurious to the glory of the Grand Monarque, threw one of the paſſengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, tho' no names had been mentioned, was ſo great, that he could not ſuppreſs it till the gentleman ſhould conclude;

Digitized by Google

clude; but interrupting him, without the leaſt reſpect to his perſonal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity;' 'What do you mean, Sir, (ſaid he) by ſaying that this war will end in the diſhonour of the king of France? Was not his motive for entering into it the moſt diſintereſted and glorious! to ſupport the rights of ſovereignty, and bring vaſſals to a proper ſenſe of duty and obedience? And has not the ſucceſs been anſwerable to the greatneſs of his deſigns? Have not his forces been every where victorious by land and ſea?'

The tone of voice with which theſe words were ſpoken, drew the eyes of all preſent upon the ſpeaker; a little old withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and ſcarce ſeemed to have ſkin enough, not to ſay fleſh, to cover the remainder of his ſhattered bones, and keep them together. But his ſpirit ſupplied all theſe diſadvantages, and enabled him to raiſe himſelf upon his ſtumps, and caſt a look of the moſt ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to deſtroy whoever dared to diſpute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, How, (ſaid he) the army of France ever victorious over Bulgaria! what aſſurance can dictate ſuch a falſehood? Where have they obtained one victory? where have they eſcaped defeat, except when the ſuperiority of their numbers, has exceeded all proportion! and even then their ſlain have generally equalled the whole amount of the forces whom they fought with; what armies have they loſt already! how few of theſe which remain will

Digitized by Google

will ever return to their native home, even in the wretched condition that you do?

These last words raised a general laugh at the person who spoke them, he being, if possible, in a more maimed and helpless condition than the one to whom they were addressed, having lost both his arms and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and submitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I see, gentlemen (said he) that you laugh at my mentioning the wretchedness of any other living creature with contempt, who am such a sufferer myself! but what absurdities will not passion hurry men into? and how could human patience bear to hear this Frenchman boast of the victories of his monarch, whole forces I myself have assisted to rout, at every place wherever I have met them.'

'You rout the forces of my master! (replied the other) my master's forces would eat up all your master's subjects for a breakfast.'—'I do not deny their number nor their appetites, (returned the Bulgarian) they leave sufficient evidence of both wherever they go; cruelty and rapine lead forth their armies; famine and desolation mark their marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift your hand, as you regard your life; else, loth as I am to make misery ridiculous, by a quarrel between two such wretches as we are, though I have not an hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample on your carcase.'

'Morblieu! compare the mighty Monarque of France with a little German king.'

'You mistake me greatly; I never meant to compare them: the greatness of your monarch I do not deny,

Digitized by Google

deify, were it not abuſed to purpoſes that make it a diſhonour to him, and a misfortune to his ſubjects; whereas our ſovereign is the father of his people, and never exerts his power, but to their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you muſt forgive my warmth; any thing againſt myſelf I can deſpiſe; but my king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear ſpoken of with diſreſpect, while I have a voice left to aſſert his cauſe: I have fought for him; I have fought with him: for he does not fit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while his ſubjects are encountering hardſhips and dangers to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels are the quarrels of his people, and he fights their battles with them; and the only regret I feel for the loſs of my arms is, that I can employ them no longer in his ſervice, for which I would lay down my life this minute with joy, could it gain him the leaſt advantage, or was neceſſary to prove my attachment to him.

'But ſince I can no longer have the happineſs of being of ſervice to him, all I have now to do is, to retire to my native country, where his paternal care has made ſuch a proviſion for my wants, that I ſhall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare and ſucceſs, diſturbed by one repining wiſh, one juſt complaint.

'But aſk this vain-glorious knight-errant if he can ſay ſo? Did he fight for the preſervation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did? Did he fight under the conduct of his ſovereign, who perſonally provided for the neceſſities, the comforts of his men, as I did? Is he ſure of a peaceful retreat at home, ſafe from the additional diſtreſs of want, as I am?

'Not at all; he fought for he knew not what, he knew

Digitized by Google

knew not whom. At a distance from his king, who was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while his subjects, the victims of his ambition, were destitute of the common indispensible necessaries of nature; nor has he any other hope of prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, but the wretch's last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means for its exertion.' —All present were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply, but opening their common wallet, in which the Bulgarian carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying with a sneer, 'that since his feet were so good, he might hereafter use them instead of hands, for he would feed him no longer.'

This poor spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied, with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the Englishman received it in another manner, for drawing out his purse, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himself into the pocket of the Bulgarian; 'Accept of these, my brother soldier, (said he) to make your journey into your native country more convenient, where you cannot meet more tender regard from your sovereign and country, than your sensible attachment to them merits. As far as I shall go your way I will take care of you myself, and that will defray the expence of the rest of your journey with comfort.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his destined master.*

THE Bulgarian was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance.

As soon as he recovered utterance, 'Such (said he) is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the sons of liberty! such the generosity of heart, that always extends the ready hand of a Briton, with relief to the distressed. May heaven preserve to your happy nation the blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a blessing to all who want their assistance. And though envy may malign, and ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds its reward in its own exertion, in the certainty of a retribution from those treasures which never fail.'

The turn of this soldier's discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him, 'if he had been bred to arms, or how long he had professed the military life, and in what station.'

'O, Sir! (replied he with a sigh, that seemed to tear his heart) your question recalls to my memory scenes that I would willingly forget for ever, and obliges me

Digitized by Google

me to relate such things as would draw tears from Tartars, Pandours, or the crueller soldiers of the king of France---I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed the military profession long, or in any other rank than that which rage and despair first placed me in, when I offered myself to my sovereign to repel the invaders, and revenge the desolation of my bleeding country. My unhappy story is no more than this.

'I am a native of Bulgaria, the son of a minister of the gospel, who observing a desire of knowledge in my youth, encouraged and improved it by his own precepts and example, and led my studious mind through the sublimest paths of science.

'As soon as he saw my resolutions sufficiently established to be proof against the levity of youth, and temptations of sense, he yielded to my entreaties, and I was admitted into the sacred order of which he was a member, and made the perfection of human wisdom, the practice of piety and virtue, under the direction of the divine word, the business of my happy life. Happy indeed then! but now the recollection of that happiness aggravates my present misery, in the irrecoverable loss of it, almost to despair.

'As the religion of the benign Redeemer of mankind does not enjoin impossibilities, by requiring us to eradicate passions, which are the essence of our nature, and whose indulgence, under the direction of reason and virtue, is the end of our creation, and the basis of our being, and fulfils the first divine command, by continuing our species, and increasing the number of his adorers, I obeyed the impulse of virtuous love, and married the daughter of a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I vainly thought, the sum of hu-

Digitized by Google

man happineſs, by a numerous offspring, which grew up on the knees of their aged grandſire, my father; now become too feeble for the active duties, while my labours ſupplied the neceſſaries of life to my contented family, in which I thus ſtood the happy center of filial and paternal love.

'In this bleſſed ſtate did I advance toward heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of his virtues, brought this deſtructive war upon the dominions of our ſovereign. O, my father! my children! my wife! in one day did I loſe you all. Theſe eyes beheld my habitation reduced to aſhes, my children maſſacred in the wantonneſs of cruelty, in deſpite of the prayers of my aged father, whoſe ſnow-white hairs, whoſe whole appearance would have ſtruck the ruthleſs hearts of the ancient heathen Gauls with reverence, in deſpite of the cries of my beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their fury on themſelves, from the defenceleſs innocents; but all in vain: the murderers, deaf to their cries and intreaties, inſenſible to the beauty of the babes, who ſtood ſmiling at the ſword that hung over their heads, firſt butchered them as in ſport, then abuſed the perſon of my wife to death, and mangled my father's breathleſs body, whoſe tender heart, the grief of ſuch a ſight had burſt, while I, unhappier far than any, ſtood looking on bound to a tree, with my jaws diſtended with the head of a ſpear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a French prieſt ſtanding by, encouraging their cruelty, as meritorious againſt heretics, and inſultingly bidding me preach now to my congregation; at the ſame time refuſing me the releaſe of death, which I beſought by all the ſigns deſpair could ſuggeſt, and

Digitized by Google

making them leave me naked, and whipped till my body was all one wound, to perish by famine and grief.

'But heaven had ordained otherwise for me: some of my neighbours, who had escaped their fury, came as soon as night favoured their fears to learn our fate, and offer any assistance in their power. They unbound me; they buried the remains of my slaughtered family, and forced me from the grave, to their retreat in the woods, where they healed my wounds, and strove to comfort my distress. But all their arguments would have been too weak to make me suffer life, had not a desire of revenge taken possession of my soul, and silenced every other thought.

'As soon as I had recovered strength, I hasted to the army of my sovereign, where I threw myself at his feet, and told him all my distress. He heard me with pity; he shed tears at my sad story, and raising me with his own hand, 'Be comforted, my brother, (said the mighty monarch to his meanest subject) be comforted, the losses of the just will be repaid in heaven; there thy happy family expect thine arrival; there thy virtues will be rewarded, thy joys complete; when the evils of this world, which endure but for a moment, shall be at an end. The horrors of war agree not with the innocence of your past life, or the humane tenderness of your disposition, and would but aggravate your griefs, by the unhappy unavoidable repetition of the like scenes of ruin. Retire therefore to my capital, where all comforts of life shall be provided for you, to alleviate your distress, while your prayers assist us in the day of battle.

'I heard his words with reverence, but his virtues

was

Digitized by Google

was too sublime for my imitation. I fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands, O Sir, (said I) this goodness is too great for man; alas, I am unable to obey its dictates; my soul languishes for vengeance! O bear with human infirmity, and permit me to fight under thy command. Heaven heard not my prayers, or it would have prevented my ruin; let me then have recourse to other methods for redress; let me contribute my poor help to thy victories, to the deliverance of my country; I die this moment, if my prayer is refused.'

'Be then my companion in this just war; (said my sovereign, raising me again) and since thy sacred function must not be disgraced with any other rank, fight by my side, and lead me to success.'

'From that day have I followed his steps in the field of battle at an awful distance, and been witness to all the wonders of his conduct and valour; till in the late action a cannon shot took off both my arms, as I had the honour of holding my own horse for him to mount, his having been killed under him as I fought by his side.

'He expressed concern at my misfortune, and commanded me to retire to his own tent; but an Austrian hussar, the moment after, cut me down with his sabre, though in the unpremeditated instinct of self-preservation, I had held up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow.

'Here I lay among my fellow sharers in the common calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke of fate, from the horses feet or the pillagers of the field. But heaven had otherwise ordained; and after two days weltering in my blood I was relieved, and recovered by charity to the condition to which you see me, and

Digitized by Google

am now ſtriving to go and avail myſelf of my maſter's humane offer, which your benevolence enables me to do with comfort.

'This fellow-ſufferer, whoſe arrogance firſt prompted me to ſpeak, has been a ſharer with me alſo in the charity which relieved us; where our common calamity created a kind of friendſhip between us, and our neceſſities ſuggeſted it to us, to combine the remains of our limbs for mutual aſſiſtance, he preparing our victuals and feeding me, while I have carried not only our poor baggage, but him alſo upon my back.

'But that alliance is at an end; not becauſe the relief which you ſo generouſly have beſtowed upon me, may ſeem to free me from the neceſſity of his aſſiſtance, for I muſt beg your leave to divide it with him, as half is ſufficient for me, but that my ſoul abhors the principles which firſt led him into this diſtreſs, and which even ſuch ſufferings cannot ſhew the impious abſurdity of; and diſclaims connection with the enemy of my gracious ſovereign, who would thus malign his glory, when he cannot deny, nor longer reſiſt the virtues that have raiſed it.'

By this time we arrived at the place where I was to be delivered to the miniſter of my deſtined maſter, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXII.

How CHRYSAL *found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank.*

WE found him busied in reviewing some new levies which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who presenting the bag in which we were, with a bent knee, 'The subsidy, may it please your most serene highness, from England,' (said he)——'It is well, (replied the sovereign) but upon what terms?'——'The same your highness had last year.'——'No more, they shall not have my men! I can have more elsewhere! France offers better.'——'Then I must return this money, please your highness.'——'Return it! no; for what?'——'If your highness does not like the terms, you will not keep the money I presume.'——'Fool, but I will! such laws may bind you subject wretches, but sovereign princes are above them; laws are not made for us.'——'I humbly implore your highness's pardon for my ignorance;

Digitized by Google

then you will give those troops to France.'——'Yes when France pays me for them'——'But in the mean time, as England has already paid your highness, they will depend upon them, and consequently suffer by the disappointment.'——'Then let them prize my friendship properly another time; I am not obliged to support Kings upon their thrones for nothing; I may invade as well as guard against invasion. They shall know whom they dare offend.'

'Something has provoked your highness's wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance should aggravate.' 'I will teach the respect that's due to sovereignty; I am not King of England, curbed in my will, and limited in power; my subjects are my slaves: they dare not think of any other law beside my pleasure. Death! can you think it! my minister at the court of England writes me word, that a base plebeian merchant has had the assurance to demand payment for the goods he sent me last year, for the support and splendour of my court, and on its not being deducted from the subsidy, to refuse supplying me this year, and even to threaten complaining to their parliament.

'Now judge you if a sovereign prince, whose forces are their security in time of danger, can brook such insolence: and to conclude the whole; what did the English minister say, when my minister remonstrated with him on this affair, but that by the laws of England, no man could be compelled to part with his property against his will, or hindered to complain, if he thought himself aggrieved; and that the laws were sacred, and must not be infringed. Think now if I can with honour keep an alliance with such people, till I have received satisfaction: I, whose subjects have

no

Digitized by Google

no property nor laws, but my will, to be treated in such a manner by a vile trader; it is not to be borne.'

'I am very sorry to hear of this affair, and particularly at this time, because if your highness should break with the English now, when they think they want your men, they may be provoked never to deal with your highness for them another time, when they have no other occasion for them, only to do your highness a service.'

'Why there may be something in that, and therefore, if they will send me the merchandize I want, and raise the subsidy, perhaps I may not refuse them the succours they desire.'

'How much does your highness require to have the subsidy raised?

'I have not thought of that yet. But surely they cannot be so unreasonable as to expect my men at the same rate, now in time of danger, as they had them in peace, when there was nothing at all for them to do, but they could work at their trades at home, and maintain themselves without wearing out their uniform, or any other expence to me?'——'That is very true; if your highness was not to consider at the same time, that even then they paid you as much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more than any other nation will, or can pay you now; for as to the promises of France, they are not to be depended on at all, whereas England always pays well.'

'I do not care! what I have gotten here I will keep, by way of repriſal, for the insult offered to my honour; and if they will have my troops, they shall pay me over again for them: so say no more on that head.'

'I sub-

Digitized by Google

'I ſubmit; but how will your highneſs ſubſiſt them at home in the mean time. There muſt be an immediate remittance made of ſome of this money to Holland to buy proviſions; for your magazines are quite exhauſted, and the conſtant demand for men, to ſupply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the loſſes they have ſuſtained in battle, have not left ſufficient to cultivate the land.'

'Then let them ſtarve! I ſhall not expend a penny to ſupport them: could not the women and children work? I wonder you ſhould dare to mention ſuch a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to ſupport the ſplendour of my court, ſince this ENGLISHMAN has refuſed to ſupply me?'

'I humbly beg your highneſs's pardon, but what anſwer am I to ſend to the Engliſh, who have demanded that the troops ſhould march directly.'

'Why, that I am ſo enraged at the inſult offered to me, by that merchant, that I will not let a man of them ſtir till I have ſatisfaction, and a new ſubſidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, to make up the deficiences in former years.'

'Deficiences! I do not underſtand your highneſs; the ſubſidies have been always regularly paid.'

'Obey my commands! I ſay there have been deficiences, which I am not at leiſure to explain in this emergency, but I ſuppoſe my word will be taken for it.'

'I fear your highneſs does not attend to the change which has lately been in England. The people who might have taken ſuch an anſwer are now out of power; and their ſucceſſors are the very men who have always been againſt dealing with your highneſs, and

may

Digitized by Google

may now take the advantage of this breach of faith, for such I well know they will call it, to throw off your alliance for ever: for the people begin to see their own strength, and their governors to exert it properly, and shew them that they want no foreign assistance. And as a proof of this, at this very time, when their enemies not only talk of invading them more confidently than ever, but also have gone so far as to make preparations for such an attempt, so far from being diffident of their own strength, or intimidated to call for help, they have actually sent a powerful body of their troops abroad, and are carrying on the war with vigour and success in every quarter of the world; satisfied that the inhabitants who remain at home are able to defend their country, and repel every attempt that may be made against it. And this change in their measures should give a caution how the persons who effected it are provoked.'

'I care not, I will make the experiment; but do you draw up your dispatches in such a manner, that we may have it in our power to explain them to whatever sense shall suit us best. In the mean time we must keep up our appearance of treating with FRANCE, to give a weight to our designs.'

The minister was prevented from replying by the entrance of the muster-master, who had been just making a survey, and taking an account of every man able to bear arms in his highness's territories.

'Well, (said his highness) how do your musters answer? shall I be able to enlarge the number of my troops this year?'—'May it please your most serene highness, (replied the officer) here is the return, in which I have taken down every man from twelve to seventy, according to your commands.'—'And how do they answer? better

Digitized by Google

better than last year I hope; there must be a great many boys grown up since.'—The list indeed looks almost as full as usual; but the late battles have so drained us of men to fill up the troops, that there are scarce any but boys left at home, and those have been so badly fed of late, that their size does not answer their years, and they look wretchedly beside. So that upon the whole, I fear your highness will find it very difficult to complete the forces already established, much more to raise any new.'

'I must, I will raise them! Tell me not of difficulties! what I command shall be performed. If there are not men, the women shall put on the mens cloaths and go; I will not be shortened of my revenue: they shall fight themselves, since they have not bred soldiers for me.'

'This, please your highness, is a list of the disabled men, who are not able to support themselves by any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the wars.'

'Disabled men! I thought I ordered you not to exchange them; they might have remained in the hands of the enemy: such I mean of them as are not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the lands; or such as were not prisoners might have been let perish of their wounds; it would have been a mercy to them to shorten their misery.'

'May it please your highness, I observed your orders, and left a number of such wretches unexchanged; but the enemy saw into my design, and sent them home, to be rid of the trouble of them. And now they are crying for subsistence, and demand the arrears of their pay, which were stopped while they were prisoners. The others our surgeons took proper care of.'

'In-

Digitized by Google

'Insolent slaves! demand pay when they are no longer able to earn it! And subsistence too! they learned this impudence from their conversation with those English! it is much they did not demand roast beef and pudding too!—Hang up half of them the next word of the kind they dare to utter, to terrify the other half to starve in quiet. And at your peril let me hear no more of them.

'As for the musters I will have them completed; man, woman, and child shall go! I will make my dominions a desert, before I lessen my consequence among the sovereign powers of Europe.'

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.*

HIS highness had just declared this magnanimous resolution, when the steward of his household entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next Hans-town, from whence his table was supplied, had refused to send him any more provisions till their bills were paid, as they had heard he was to receive no more subsidies from England; and there was scarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princesses of the various branches of his highness's most illustrious house, having come to pay him a visit of congratulation, upon the birth of the most serene prince his son and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's flesh and venison, nor even a sufficient quantity of these;

the

Digitized by Google

the misery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his forests, to save themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure; but then bursting into a rage, 'Hunt in my forests! (said he) audacious slaves! dearly shall they pay for their presumption! Order my troops to march that way directly! I'll lay the country waste!'—'Please your highness (replied the steward) that will not cost you the trouble of marching your troops: the country is a desert already.'

'Who told you that they have been guilty of this insolence? you should have seized the author of the report, for not apprehending the criminals.'

'May it please your highness, they took one wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here to receive the sentence of your pleasure; and the stag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and had borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded hunger, and the cries of a starving family of grand children, for he is an old man, and his three sons have been killed in the wars; but though I own he moved me, I did not presume to let him go.'

'It is well you did not, or you should have suffered in his stead. Go, strip him naked, bind him on that stag, and then let him loose with him upon his back into the woods; proclaiming that no one, upon pain of death, presume to give him the least relief; he shall have hunting enough.'

'But what will your highness have me to do about provisions for the entertainment of the princes? I believe they design a long visit, for they have brought all

Digitized by Google

the young princes and princeſſes of their illuſtrious families with them.'

'I care not! I am not to be diſturbed on ſuch trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my reſolution: let them go home again.'

'Not faſting I preſume; for they have already ſignified ſome of them, that they have come without their breakfaſts, by calling for refreſhment the moment they arrived; and indeed, I fear, the principal motive of this viſit of their highneſſes was want of any thing to eat at home.'

'Confuſion! what can I do? Here, take this money, and ſend for victuals for them.'

The ſight of an handful of guineas was an agreeable ſurpriſe to the ſteward, who had not heard of the arrival of the ſubſidy from England. He received them with evident pleaſure, and I felt no leſs in being delivered from this ſcene of ſovereignty, of which I was ſincerely ſick; though, by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domeſtic office of going to market for a morſel of bread, from the glory of cauſing the ſlaughter of thouſands, to the virtue of ſupporting the lives of a few.

The ſteward, as ſoon as he withdrew from the preſence of his highneſs, called the other officers of the houſhold together, and told them with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their maſter's breaking with England, ſo that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad tidings, by ſhewing them the gold.

The pleaſing ſight raiſed univerſal joy; they licked their lips, feaſted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of will-

Digitized by Google ing

ing minds and keen appetites, while the steward, not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a mouldy crust with a draught of sour wine, and then went to market for himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state. Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greatest dispatch, to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions, it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.

CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.*

I NOW entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last; my present master denying himself the very necessaries of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last

Digitized by Google

laſt lived in the vain oſtentation of ſplendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It was difficult to ſay, which hypocriſy was moſt abſurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral juſtice. The former baſely ſtealing, as I may ſay, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whoſe value ariſes only from its being uſed, by thus ſecreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjuſtifiable as that of avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to ſupply the want of it.

I here was ſoon initiated into all the myſteries of that lower ſpecies of trade called Pedling, which is in a manner engroſſed by thoſe people. Falſe weights and meaſures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every ſpecies of deceit, that can impoſe upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a ſcience taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earlieſt exertion of reaſon, to wear off every heſitation of conſcience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto eſcaped mutilation, made my maſter, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminiſhed heap, as I ſhould but make their loſs the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purſe, to make a ſhew with upon occaſions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was ſo ſtrongly ſuſpected.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion, happened to be one of their moſt ſolemn feſtivals. My maſter therefore, who was of the tribe of Levi, retired from buſineſs early, to purify and prepare himſelf for the ce-

Digitized by Google

lebration of the moſt ſacred and myſterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the ſacrifice of the Paſſover, which by a ſecret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb to the real immulation of human blood; for which purpoſe the moſt beautiful children were purchaſed at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of neceſſitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of ſervants, if they could not be obtained by ſtealth, and brought from all parts of Europe to theſe ceremonies: It being a long received opinion, that the original ſacrifice of a lamb was deſigned only for that one occaſion, to conciliate the favour of heaven, to the eſcape of their forefathers out of Egypt; but that to render it propitious to their reſtoration to their country, and to the conſummation of their promiſed happineſs and glory, the type muſt be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the pureſt ſtate of infant innocence, be offered inſtead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But as ſome traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts diveſted of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obſtacle to this practice, and ſtimulate ſuperſtition by hatred and revenge, the children of Chriſtians were appointed for this ſacrifice, and thoſe eſpecially of the ſuperior ranks of life, whoſe pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with ſeverity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the inſtitution of the Paſſover were literally obſerved in reſpect to the victim, who was to be without blemiſh, a male of the firſt year, that is, the firſt born of his mother, and to be kept fourteen days before he was ſacrificed,

Digitized by Google during

during which time they fed him with the richeſt food, to raiſe him to the higheſt perfection of his nature.

The place choſen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a ſummer houſe in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their ſynagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As ſoon as they were placed in order, one of the elders ſtood up, and in a long ſpeech declared the occaſion of their meeting, read the original inſtitution of the Paſſover, and then recited the tradition, which changed the ſacrifice to be offered, as I ſaid before; concluding with an oath of ſecrecy, which all preſent joined in, and confirmed with the moſt dreadful imprecations, and which was to be ſealed by the participation of the horrid myſtery.

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemiſh, and their primogeniture proved by thoſe who had provided them, who were reimburſed their expences before the ſacrifice began, by the general contribution of all preſent.

This method was uſed, that every perſon might have an equal ſhare in the merit of the ſacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expenſive to provide a lamb for every head of a family in the congregation.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.

Digitized by Google

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice.

I SEE your astonishment, how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action, against which his severest vengeance is denounced; yet such are the errors which the least deviation from the straight paths of reason lead to, when ceremony is made the essence of religion, and human inventions

Digitized by Google

ventions substituted in the place of immutable eternal virtue.

The Devil, whoever is meant by that most comprehensive name, has long been charged with being the author of this, and every other vice and folly, which men are ashamed of owning themselves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuse. But if man would consider a little, he must blush at so unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor Devil his due, who, among all his failings, has never been suspected of being a fool, and nothing else could have devised such gross enormities, such contradictions to the plainest rules of common reason.

But of this strange institution of human sacrifices, we need search for the original no farther than in the heart of man, who observing, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its blessings to be made, in the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and measuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he arose from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of heaven, hindering him to see the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the instruments for slaying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was

Digitized by Google

was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in and seized them, as they stood stupified with their fright.

The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers, (though hardened by all the cruelties of war) with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather; for as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, O father! father! come and untie my hands, those ugly cords hurt me!

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, then starting into a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and snatching him up in his arms, 'O my child! (said he in an extasy) have I found you! have I rescued you in the very moment when you were going to be sacrificed by these wretches. O my child! my child!'

These words awoke the fury of the soldiers, which burst upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be restrained. The house was in a moment a scene of horror beyond description. Most of them fell instant sacrifices to their resistless rage. Happier far in having so speedy an end put to their sufferings than the few survivors, who saved their lives for that moment, by throwing themselves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of passion, the soldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little respite which this caution gave, the officers

Digitized by Google

ficers improved to pacify the ſoldiers, who would not be perſuaded to ſpare the reſt, by any other argument, but a poſitive aſſurance of having them put to the moſt ſevere and infamous public death.

When the ſtorm was a little calmed by theſe means, and the living ſeparated from the dead, the pillage of the ſcene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the moſt unrelenting ſeverity, and retaliated their wicked intentions with examplary juſtice on the miſerable criminals, ſtripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their deſtined victims, who were unbound with the tendereſt care, and carried away till their parents ſhould be diſcovered; or in caſe that could not be, to be educated at the public expence, as the children of the ſtate, while their intended murderers were thrown into priſon, till a puniſhment ſhould be appointed ſevere enough for their guilt.

In the confuſion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whoſe paſſions were raiſed ſo high by the recovery of him, that as ſoon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to ſhare his joy with his diſconſolate wife.

The tenderneſs of this meeting was a juſt reverſe of the former part of the laſt ſcene, where the helpleſs infants were led forth to be ſlaughtered.

As the Jews were ſome of the wealthieſt of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magiſtrates, to prevent the imputation of injuſtice, and to ſet the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early next morning, where the reſcued infants were produced on one

ſide.

Digitized by Google

ſide, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new maſter who bore a conſiderable office in the ſtate, beſide his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a ſhort but moving ſpeech. He told them, 'That having loſt his only child, the infant there preſent, about a month before, and being informed, when he ſerved in Poland, in his youth, that the Jews had a cuſtom of ſtealing, and ſacrificing, or murdering infants, on the night when they celebrated their Paſſover, he made no ſearch for him, but ſeemed to believe a ſtory which he had invented himſelf, to appeaſe the diſtraction of his wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that was kept in the garden of his country-houſe, from hence he was ſtolen; watching in the mean time every motion of the Jews with ſuch exactneſs, that he had punctual information of their meeting, at the place where he had ſeized them the evening before; where it was to be lamented, that the juſt reſentment of the ſoldiers had anticipated the ſeverer hand of juſtice, and ſaved them from the laws, the judgment of which he now demanded againſt the remaining few, for himſelf, and for the unknown parents of the innocent victims whom they ſaw before them.'

A roar of univerſal indignation purſued his words, which had inflamed the rage and deteſtation of the people ſo high, that they were with difficulty reſtrained from tearing the wretches in pieces, by the ſame arguments which had ſaved them from the ſoldiers before; nor were the Jews admitted to ſay a word in their own defence, for though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controverſy; and beſide, many of the people who had

formerly

Digitized by Google

formerly loſt their children, now charged them with their murder, with the ſtrongeſt appearance of juſtice.

They were therefore dragged back to priſon, where they lay loaded with chains, till the day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very ſpot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the houſe being raſed to the ground for that purpoſe, and all the effects of ſuch as were taken in this fact confiſcated to the uſe of the ſtate.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly reſented, brings CHRYSAL *into a ſervice which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new maſter employed. The King of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magiſtrates. His appropriation of money to his own uſe. His reflections on the ſight of* CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was ſcarce ended when I changed my maſter again. The city in which I was had profeſſed a neutrality in the preſent war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biaſſed by private intereſt, the magiſtrates had, on many occaſions, ſhewn the ſtrongeſt partiality to the enemies of the king of Bulgaria.

Of this, that heroic prince overlooked many inſtances, in compaſſion to their folly; but inſtead of inſpiring them with proper ſentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raiſed their injudicious pride ſo high, that attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded ſo far as to refuſe him thoſe good offices, which by the univerſal laws

Digitized by Google

laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his meſſengers with diſreſpect.

This drew on them a reſentment that was never raiſed in vain. The king, without waiting to waſte time in complaints, ſent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their ſafety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with ſubmiſſions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As theſe contributions were too large to be immediately diſcharged by the ſtate, they were obliged to be levied on the ſubjects; by which means I came into the ſervice of this monarch, to whoſe treaſurer I was paid, by the humbled magiſtrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wiſh for ſuch an opportunity of ſeeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions to be. How my expectations were anſwered cannot be explained juſtly without a particular account of every thing I ſaw, while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow ſhort, I ſhall only give you a few of the moſt remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the reſt.

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, converſing with the moſt engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redreſſing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magiſtrates of the city I had juſt left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make ſub-

miſſion

Digitized by Google

miſſion for their miſbehaviour; for to humble them the more effectually, he had ordered that they ſhould attend themſelves.

As ſoon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and delivering the money to his treaſurer, implored his pardon in the moſt abject terms of ſubmiſſion. 'Ariſe (ſaid the monarch) and ceaſe your ſupplications; the poſture and addreſs are both improper to be offered to a man; but the paſſions of the fooliſh are ever in extremes; and your fear ſinks you now as low, as your vain inſolence raiſed you high before. Depart in peace and ſafety; and let this teach you not to miſtake moderation for fear another time. But beware that you offend not ſo again. Mercy, that is amiable in the firſt inſtance, degenerates to folly, if extended to a ſecond.'

The magiſtrates, unable to ſpeak before him, retired in confuſion from his preſence, when turning to his treaſurer, 'Take (ſaid he) ſo much of that money as will repair the loſſes ſuſtained by the innocent inhabitants of the country, around their city, and ſee that it is given to the ſufferers, to be applied to that uſe and none other; for I war not with the poor, nor would have my ſteps marked by deſolation, when it can poſſibly be avoided. And of the remainder, leave the uſual ſum upon my table, for my private occaſions.'

Then addreſſing himſelf to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (ſaid he) is the ſubmiſſion of the proud! how does guilt humble the conſcious heart! Theſe unhappy men, who dared not now to meet our eyes, but haſted with down caſt looks from the flaſh of juſt indignation, when laſt we ſaw them, looked us in the face with the aſſurance of friendly reſpect, and ſeem-

Digitized by Google

ed happy in the marks of our regard. Let this teach us to preſerve the adamantine ſhield of a clear conſcience, and terror can never ſtrike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When the treaſurer went to divide the money among which I lay, according to his maſter's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I ſhould be torn ſo ſoon from the preſence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his maſter's pages to lay on the table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatneſs had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his perſon. This made me ſurpriſed to find every thing in a plainneſs, far greater than what I had in many inſtances obſerved in private life. But I inſtantly perceived my error, and that his greatneſs was his own, eſtabliſhed on the virtues of his ſoul, and independent of, and ſuperior to every adventitious circumſtance.

I had not lain long upon his table when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two acroſs the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his ſoul in the moſt ardent devotion to heaven.

He then aroſe with a moſt ſerenely chearful countenance, and coming to the table poured out the money, and viewing it earneſtly for a moment, 'O thou ſource of every evil, which diſtracts this wretched world, (ſaid he) let me not be infected by thy poiſon; let not my heart conceive a fondneſs for thee, farther than what thy native value of enabling it to do good, juſtly entitles thee to; I am yet free from thine infatuation; nor have ever ſuffered avarice to tempt me to deſire thee by improper means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuſe thee

Digitized by Google

thee by profusion. This pittance only do I call my own, which I devote to the divine author of all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by supplying with it the necessities of my distressed fellow creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to observe my shape, he took me up and looking attentively at me, "Is there no corner of the earth (said he) where the wealth of Britain is not dispersed! If its commerce collects the produce of every climate under heaven, its munificence does also diffuse its riches as far. Great and happy nation! wert thou but sensible of the blessings of thy condition; but the time is come, when thou openest thine eyes to thy own interest, and feelest the mightiness of thy strength. How great is the power of true wisdom! how happy the people who have a good man for their guide.'

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and as soon as it was dark, wrapped himself in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp in a disguise, that secured him from misinformation or deceit.

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in, and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had seen of war, made me expect a scene of tumult and confusion. But how was I surprized here,

Digitized by Google

to find every thing as regular and tranquil, as in the beſt governed city in the midſt of peace!

My maſter had not walked far, when ſome converſation that ſeemed to be carried on with warmth, in one of the tents, catched his ear, he ſtopped to liſten what might be the ſubject of it. 'I imagine (ſaid a voice within) that we ſhall have a battle ſoon: the cheerfulneſs of the king's looks, and the more than common ſpirits he has been in for theſe few days, are certain ſigns that he has ſome great things in view. I always obſerve him ſo before a battle.'

'The ſooner it comes the better (replied another) I only wiſh, that our forces were not ſo overmatched in numbers; not that I fear ſucceſs when he is with us; but that we might be able to give them a total defeat at once, and ſo prevent their making head again. For ſuch is the inequality at preſent, that while we are killing half of them, the other half eſcape; and though what we deſtroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the run-aways ſtill remains to give us more trouble. But, however, we muſt only do our duty, and kill them all, one after another.'

'And ſo we will, brother, (continued the other) if it pleaſe God to preſerve our king to us; for while we have him we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only increaſes the glory of vanquiſhing them. Indeed I wonder how they can ſtand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war againſt their inclination, who have no intereſt in the event, no attachment to their leader! But what attachment ſhould they have to ſuch leaders, who ſhew no regard to their diſtreſſes, nor make any proviſion for their wants, but juſt drive them to battle, like oxen to the ſlaughter, and

Digitized by Google

and when it is over, take no farther care about them, but let them perish by famine, if they cannot relieve themselves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go?'

'Well, brother (returned a third voice) thank God that is not our case; we follow a leader who is a father to his soldiers, and provides for all their occasions. We fight for ourselves, and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when he has disappointed the designs of his enemies, and restored peace to his people: but if we are to fight to-morrow, we had better take our rest to-night, to make us fresh and strong for the battle. God bless and preserve our king; while his care watches over us, we can sleep in safety in the midst of our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the king with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eyes. 'O my God (said he, when the voices ceased) enable me to protect this people, and to bring this just war to an happy end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.' He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp: his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick, for he would not trust them to any person where he could possibly attend to them himself.

The manner in which all things were ordered there for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder; no negligence or

Digitized by Google

abuſe among the attendants; no miſapplication or embezzlement of the proviſions made for the patients; all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other ſcenes of the ſame nature which I had ſeen before?

If he was delighted with the ſpirited attachment of his ſoldiers in health, his delight was almoſt raiſed to extaſy, by the behaviour of theſe victims of the madneſs of the great. The thought of having ſuffered in his cauſe, the extremeſt anguiſh of pain, nor even the agonies of death, ever making them utter a ſyllable to his diſadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preſervation was always joined with their own relief, and his happineſs recommended with their ſouls to heaven.

This was too moving to be long bore; he joined in the general prayer, and haſted from the tender ſcene as ſoon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a ſtrict view of every thing in which his orders might be diſobeyed; and theſe his particular family, as he called them, ſuffer by neglect.

His tour was now finiſhed, and he returned to his tent, to take his neceſſary reſt, having diſtributed, on the various occaſions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him except me, who happened to ſtick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exerciſe, and ſerenity of conſcience enſured his repoſe; he fell aſleep the moment his head touched his pillow; nor awoke till his uſual early time of riſing the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of ſuch a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head and undiſmayed heart, and ſoon reduced

Digitized by Google

duced the confusion of them into such order, as made their execution easy.

As the soldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The king had scarce finished the business of the morning, when an officer brought him an account that the forces of the enemy were in motion. 'I expected it, (said the king cooly) I knew they could not remain long in the situation they were in. But let us observe their motions, that we may regulate ours by them.

Then ordering some of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring house, from whence he could view them distinctly, where having observed them attentively for some considerable time, 'It is done, my friends! (said he, with a smile of joy that enlightened all his face) it is done! that last motion is what we wanted. Let us haste and embrace the opportunity which heaven has put into our hands.'—— Then descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory; the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex, to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall therefore only say, that my master was completely victorious; and to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person; the excellent disposition he made of the rest, rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action, from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This

Digitized by Google

This victory was not gained without resistance: the field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over; when cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.*

THE transactions succeeding this event were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that to a being free from the contradictory phrensies of mankind, the very thought is painful.——His majesty's next care, after returning public thanks to heaven, on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of his soldiers: he praised! he pro-

Digitized by Google

promoted! he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and diſpoſitions. Nor was his juſtice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than ſevere in the puniſhment of the want of it.

Under ſuch a leader, what forces could withſtand his ſoldiers? Under the diſcerning eye of ſuch a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour? who dared to be guilty of diſobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle, the victorious army was directly marched away to a ſiege, their ſucceſs in which, was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was ſo ſhocking, that the virtues of my maſter were not a balance to the horrors of his ſervice, and I began to wiſh for a releaſe from ſuch a ſcene of glory, when an unexpected occaſion ſhewed me his character in a light that raiſed my admiration of him ſtill higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private ſoldier, threw himſelf proſtrate acroſs his way, crying, 'Mercy! O great king! have mercy on the ſufferings of a wretch in deſpair, and ſhew yourſelf the ſubſtitute of heaven by impartial juſtice.'—The guards and attendants on the king would have ſpurned the ſuppliant out of the way, but his majeſty, ſtruck with the ſtrangeneſs of the addreſs, and imagining it muſt proceed from ſome extraordinary cauſe, interpoſed, and bidding him ariſe. 'What is the grievance you complain of?' (ſaid he with a placid look

Digitized by Google.

look and encouraging accent) or againſt whom do you ſo ſolemnly implore juſtice?

'O great and good king! (replied the ſtranger, with an air that beſpoke ſomething above his preſent appearance) my griefs are too many to be told ſo conciſely, as your preſent ſituation demands, and the juſtice I implore will require time to diveſt nature of its ſtrongeſt paſſions.'—'What can this mean! (ſaid the monarch in ſurpriſe) meet me directly at my tent, and expect that juſtice, which the ſimplicity of truth ſhall be entitled to, without theſe laboured exclamations.'—'The buſineſs which his mind was intent upon, prevented the king's thinking any more of this affair, till he ſaw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him, 'Now (ſaid he) ſpeak your griefs with the boldneſs, but alſo with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redreſs of juſtice.'—Encouraged by theſe words, the ſtranger bowing his head, and pauſing a moment, as if to ſupport his grief, began thus: 'So may the ear of heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious king, as thou haſt readily vouchſafed to hear my cries! ſo may its juſtice redreſs thy wrongs, as thou ſhalt deal with mine. Thou ſeeſt before thee the moſt wretched of mankind, whom deſpair has reduced to the neceſſity of flying from the defence of his country, and imploring juſtice for his private wrongs, from the declared foe of my ſovereign. But let me not waſte your time with fruitleſs complaints. My name, though ſpoken with ſome reſpect in my native country, is too obſcure to have reached your ears, as my anceſtors wiſely confined their virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to emblazon their names with titles, that too often mar the happieſt of their owners.

'In

Digitized by Google

'In their steps I trod, till the wrath of heaven kindled the ambition of princes, and my country became the theatre of their contention. I then thought it my duty to arise in its defence, and the justice of my motive drew success on my attempts. But while I vainly indulged the hope of being instrumental in delivering my country from the horrors of war, a foe broke into my house, thus destitute of its defender, and rifled all the treasure of my soul. O my unhappy wife! my newly wedded, beauteous wife! In vain didst thou call upon me in the hour of thy distress! when the hand of the ravisher was twisted in thine hair, and the horror of immediate ruin took possession of thy soul! Thy protector was away, busied in the defence of others, while the wolf was ravaging his deserted fold.

'But whether does my distraction hurry me? O pardon, gracious monarch, the inconsistencies of despair! I will be brief; I will not trespass on thy precious time.' —He paused then a moment, till a flood of tears eased the fulness of his heart, and then proceeded thus.

'In the irruption of thy troops into Bohemia, about six months ago, my unhappy fortune led a party of them to my house, where the industry of my ancestors, for ages of peace, fell a sacrifice to the wantonness of unrestrained devastation in one moment. But I complain not of this. It was my share of the indiscriminate calamity. Alas! my woes are of another nature.

'The beauty of my wife struck the very hardened hearts of the soldiers, with such reverence, that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay a sacrilegious hand on her: but this safeguard that protected her from rapine, only raised the more audacious rage of lust against her. The officer who commanded the party no sooner saw

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

general, and other things few countries chuse that of learned Amsterdam. Conclusion of agency for her Grace.

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the Hague. Political conversation a Dutchman and a Jew. They differ in opinion leaves his friend Van Hagen in great

CHAP. XIX.

Adventure bids adieu to her Grace, and sails for Africa. Chrysal remains with a Dutch principles and confidence of a good Dutchman into Germany. His opinion of the

CHAP. XX.

Chrysal's remarks on military glory in the strange passengers taken into the boat. Vice and pride break out in persons not profited for such passions.

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. His dishonest master.

CHAP. XXII.

How Chrysal found his master employed and happiness of absolute power. His recreation, and support of his revenues. subjects of liberty, punctuality to his publication to maintain the consequence

CHAP. XXIII.

More cases of sovereignty, and consequences Chrysal is sent to market, where he is bought.

CHAP. XXIV.

Conversation between two dealers in flesh, of the Professor in the traditional way of procuring (human) hearts explained.

Digitized by Google

I saw all
at instant
e ravisher
, that my
action to
n torture

n inspired
our justice.
I I, he is a
y; he is a
sumed my
eserter, the
abhorrence
dier, and I
, though I
enry of my
, that the
, but those
ar only to
pportunity

ory! this is
; for which
yesterday;
e's feet this
u by that
on earth,
dship. O

CHAP.

saw her, than inflamed with brutal desire, he hurried her away with him to the camp, where imagination shrinks in horror, from the thought of what she may have suffered.

'The news of my misfortune soon reached me: no restraints of military duty were of force to hold me a moment; I flew to the scene of my ruin, where having learned what I have now related to you, the greatness of my grief stupified me for a time, till the thought of my wife's being still alive, and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to a resolution of labouring for her relief. I therefore immediately entered in disguise into those very troops, which had perpetrated my ruin, as I despaired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any other means. My stratagem had success; I soon learned that the officer, who had brought my wife from my house, had been obliged to give her up to his general, who had demanded her, as soon as she had been brought to the camp.

'A dawn of hope broke in upon me; though I could not gain any account of her after this, I thought that a man, honoured with your particular esteem, must be possessed of virtue, and this I knew must be her protection.

'Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my own corps, where my absence was easily excused, to a general who was my friend, and who readily yielded to my request of sending a trumpet with a letter to enquire for such a lady, and to desire that she might be treated with the tenderness and respect due to her fate and beauty, till she should be restored to her friends.

'But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, when an answer was returned, that the general knew not of such

 a person

Digitized by Google

a perſon. Deſpair now ſtared me in the face; I ſaw all the horrors of my condition; and would that inſtant have returned in my diſguiſe and ſtabbed the raviſher at the head of his forces, had I not reflected, that my Theodora might be only expoſed by ſuch an action to new inſults, and her life perhaps ſacrificed in torture and ignominy to revenge.

'While I fluctuated in this diſtreſs, heaven inſpired me with the thought of having recourſe to your juſtice. Though he is the enemy of my ſovereign, ſaid I, he is a man, who feels the tender impulſe of humanity; he is a king, who delights in juſtice! I therefore re-aſſumed my diſguiſe, and entered into your camp, as a deſerter, the night before this battle, in which inſtinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me to the duty of a ſoldier, and I happened to fight near your perſon; where, though I was ſenſible of my crime, in aſſiſting the enemy of my ſovereign, I had this palliative conſolation, that the forces I engaged were not my fellow ſubjects, but thoſe of a perfidious ally, who entered into the war only to take his own advantage, when a proper opportunity ſhould offer.

'This, O gracious king, is my unhappy ſtory! this is the grievance for which I implore thy juſtice; for which I fought againſt the allies of my ſovereign yeſterday; for which I threw myſelf before your horſe's feet this morning; for which I now call upon you by that power who has placed you as his ſubſtitute on earth, and will require an account of thy ſtewardſhip. O juſtice! juſtice! juſtice!'

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul.

THE king heard out the stranger's story without interruption, and then addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him, 'How unhappy (said he) is the condition of princes, who must be answerable for the crimes of their servants, as if every man's own were not more than he can bear.

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him brave, I thought justice and mercy attempered valour in his breast. But perhaps he is wronged; let us not judge too hastily; go, (turning to one of his officers) bid him come to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occasion; if he is guilty, he has forfeited my esteem for ever; but if this complaint is only a calumny devised to exasperate me against one of my best friends, severely shall the author of it feel that justice, which he so solemnly implores. Let him therefore be taken into custody 'till the event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity, which his apparent distress stands in need of; nor let any hardship or indignity give justice the appearance of prejudice, or seem to intimidate his resolution.'

He then retired to enjoy those few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His Majesty's commands were so punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where

Digitized by Google

where he immediately waited on his master, who received him with his usual familiarity; and having conferred with him for some time, on the situation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the stranger to be brought to confront him, and then spoke thus, as if in continuation of his former discourse: 'It has ever been my strongest wish, my most positive command, that the calamities of this necessary war should fall as light as possible on the innocent subjects of those powers who have provoked it; particularly, I have always enjoined the strictest care to avoid every unnecessary devastation of private property, every appearance of cruelty, or ill treatment to the defenceless weakness of the aged, of women and children. What then must be my grief to find these orders disobeyed? to find that the ruins of the poor mark the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguish arise to heaven against me? But these enormities shall not lie on my head, for neglect of punishing them; nor be perfisted in on the hope of impunity. Were my right hand guilty of such crimes, I would cut it off with my left, rather than it should infect my mind.'

The solemnity with which the king spoke these words, struck all present with terror for the accused, who alone was ignorant of their design. The king saw the general concern, and to let the impression sink the deeper, he paused some moments before he proceeded; then turning short upon the general, with a determined look, and awful voice, 'Tell me (said he) where is the woman whom thou hadst from the officer who brought her to the camp, when the forces under thy command entered into Bohemia? the woman whom

Digitized by Google

the Bohemian general sent to enquire after in vain, and whom I fear thou didst deny, and still detainest for purposes too base to mention?'

The unexpectedness of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all presence of mind: he stood abashed, and the confusion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king saw his distress, with the greatest concern, but superior to every private regard that could interfere with his sublimer character, 'Tell me where she is this instant! (said he) nor aggravate by falsehood, crimes already too flagrant; for I will know the whole of this black affair.'

'O sire! (replied the general, throwing himself at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but I cannot bear thy wrath; let me die this moment; let that punishment expiate my guilt; but afflict me no longer with thy displeasure, which is heavier than I can bear.'——'Where is the woman, speak?'——'Safe and inviolate in my tent. My intreaties have not been able to prevail on her virtue; and my passion was too delicate to seek gratification by force.'——'This moment let her be sent for; and let the cause of her coming be concealed from her; I will learn the truth of this strange affair from herself. In the mean time let her husband be treated with tenderness and respect. His misfortunes deserve compassion.'

The king had scarce said this, when an express arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulsed with great loss, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital. ——'Thy will be done, O God, (said the king) thy will be done.'——And then, without

Digitized by Google

without any appearance of ſurpriſe, or alteration in his looks, he inſtantly gave orders for a ſtrong detachment of the army under his own command to march, to the reinforcement of that which had ſuffered this loſs; and retired to conſider of the alterations which this event muſt neceſſarily occaſion in the operations of the campaign, and write his ſeveral orders accordingly, for he was his own ſecretary.

But though his looks were thus eaſy, his heart ſeverely felt this misfortune; 'O God, (ſaid he, as ſoon as he was alone) when will thy wrath be appeaſed? When ſhall this people have reſt? If I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, but ſpare them! There is nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a wiſe man's care or regard; the victory with which it pleaſed thee to bleſs our arms ſo lately, raiſed my hopes to a proſpect of peace. But the ſcene is now changed; and this advantage will raiſe the pride and malice of our enemies ſtill higher, and make new deluges of blood neceſſary, to bring them to a ſenſe of reaſon and juſtice. Thy will be done, O Lord; but as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make uſe of the means which thou haſt put into our power to accompliſh that end, which appears to us moſt juſt and advantageous. The horrors of war are ready to burſt upon my country, after all my endeavours to ſave it; and divert them elſewhere. But they ſhall not be unopposed; I myſelf will ſtand in the breach, and defend my native country.'

The ſerenity in the looks of the king had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greateſt alacrity: and though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occaſioned neither

Digitized by Google

diſorder nor confuſion. Active as light, the king was every where, ordered every thing, ſaw every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his ſoldiers, as for the greateſt poſſible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquiſhed, for they were but men; but to deject or diſcover his mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the ſtory of the ſtranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's ſpeech to him, and generoſity to the ſtrangers. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable conſequences of the war.*

BY this time the Bohemian lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The firſt ſight of this woman raiſed emotions in his heart, which it had long been a ſtranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a ſweetneſs and expreſſion in her looks beyond deſcription, ſoon made him ſenſible, that all his heroiſm could not eradicate the paſſions of nature; and raiſed his pity, both for the unfortunate general, and for her huſband.

He ſtood ſome moments gazing at her in ſilent aſtoniſhment; but recollecting himſelf ſoon, he addreſſed her thus, with the higheſt complacency and reſpect, in his look and accent. 'I have ſent for you, madam, to this important place, for the deliverance of your ſex, to learn from yourſelf the manner of your having been

Digitized by Google

been brought away from Bohemia, and the cauſe of your being ſince detained by the general of my army. Speak, madam, have you ſuffered any violence, any uſage improper for your ſex and merit? ſpeak with the aſſurance of truth, and expect juſtice and redreſs.'

'O mighty king, (ſaid the lady, proſtrating herſelf at his feet) oft have I heard of thy wondrous virtues; but never till this moment could I think that you could ſtoop ſo low, as to take notice of my wretchedneſs. My ſad ſtory is no more than this; I was torn from my houſe by an officer of your army; I was hurried away to the camp by him; and there inſulted by the offers of his love; but heaven delivered me from him. Your general heard of my diſtreſs, and reſcued me from his power: ſince which time I have had no perſonal cauſe of complaint, beſide the indiſcriminate calamity of the wars, which have robbed me of my huſband, and left me a friendleſs widow in the hands of mine enemies.'—A flood of tears here ſtopped her utterance.

The king raiſing her from the ground, proceeded thus: A widow, madam, did you ſay; how long ſince you have loſt your huſband, and by what means did you hear of his death?

'O ſire! (replied ſhe) as ſoon as I was freed from the horrors of brutal violence by the general, I wrote to my huſband with his permiſſion, but received no anſwer to many, very many letters. This ſuſpence was worſe than death, and almoſt drove me to deſpair; till the general at length, in compaſſion to my miſery, wrote himſelf to the commander of the army in which my huſband had ſerved, who returned him for anſwer, that he had been killed about the time I was taken priſoner.

Digitized by Google

prisoner. O! happy had been my lot had I shared his fate!'

'I hope, madam, (said the king) you have received no injuries that make you weary of life: I hope my general has not misbehaved himself to you.'

'O sire! (replied she) I have received no injuries, beside the irreparable loss of my husband, after which I can have no desire to live. As for the general, he has always treated me with the greatest compassion and tenderness; but how will your majesty hear the voice of affliction? will you grant the only wish of an heart in despair? let me be conveyed to some religious house, where I may devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of heaven, far from the knowledge of the general, and every other person who has ever heard my name. I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you with this request; but to whom should we fly in the moment of distress, except to heaven, or its vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its seal to their authority.'

'You may depend (returned the king) upon every endeavour of my power to make you happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the general, in your desire of being retired from the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenious; I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own virtue and my command.'

'O sire! (replied she) mistake not the incoherencies of distraction; the general has always treated me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the only thing my soul could disapprove in his behaviour. He offered me honourable love; but, alas, my husband! my dear husband

Digitized by Google

husband has possession of this heart! there he is buried! nor ever shall another love disturb his dear remembrance.'

'Madam, be comforted, (returned the king) such virtue as yours is the particular care of heaven; you may be happy yet; your husband may be still alive; in the disorders of these unhappy times many strange things happen; many who are thought to be alive are long since dead; many who have been long thought to be dead are found to be alive.'—'O sire! what can your words import? you would not jest with misery! you cannot speak in vain! O, am I yet to hope after so long despair?'—'Hope! always hope! but I shall send a proper person to explain my words.'

Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and impatience, he called him, 'Go, (said he) in there, and see what blessings heaven reserves for virtue; go in alone; such meetings of the soul as must attend your meeting, are too delicate to be exposed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the general, 'You have behaved nobly, my friend (said he) in such temptation, which was almost too great for human virtue; had you injured such excellence, dear as you are to my heart, your life should have expiated the crime. But you have behaved nobly; in such a trial, it is virtue to refrain from vice; the errors you have fallen into are but the weaknesses of nature; for to have been insensible to her beauty and perfections would have argued a deficiency in humanity.—But beware, my friend, of indulging those passions; they enervate the heart and wean the soul insensibly from virtue; the example is before thine eyes; see how the violence of love has been

Digitized by Google

been able to urge the noble heart of this woman's husband, to defeat his charge, to enter into the ſervice of his enemies, to fight againſt the dictates of his own conſcience: think of this, and be more cautious for the future; the heart of a ſoldier has not room for love.'

The general, unable to reply, threw himſelf at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I underſtand you, (ſaid the king, ſmiling) your paſſion is not quite cured; but you ſhall have employment to wear off this ruſt of idleneſs: return to your command this moment, and expect my farther orders.'

The general obeyed, and the king addreſſing thoſe around him, 'To be without fault (ſaid he) were not to be a man; he is the beſt who has the ſmalleſt; and allowance is to be made for human frailty, where the temptation is too great for human virtue.'

As the king ſaid this, the ſtranger and his wife came out together, and throwing themſelves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful extaſy. 'Ariſe, (ſaid the monarch) and be happy in each other. I have reſtored you your wife, (ſaid he to the huſband) and am ready to do you every further inſtance of juſtice which you can demand.'

'My ſoul is ſatisfied, O gracious king; my ſoul is ſatisfied, (replied he) I aſk no more of heaven, but to reward your goodneſs, your juſtice and compaſſion.'

'But there is one thing more to be conſidered, (ſaid the king) your eſtate was waſted; your houſes burned by my ſoldiers; I do not know the loſs you may have ſuffered; take this (giving him a large purſe of gold) if that is not ſufficient to repair it, when heaven in mercy to mankind ſhall bid the calamities of war to ceaſe, if my

Digitized by Google

my life is ſpared, come to me, and I will remove every cauſe of your complaint; I do not aſk you to enter into my ſervice in this war; but if your honour, your conſcience oppoſe it not, you may expect every encouragement due to your merit.'

'O ſire! it is too much! your goodneſs overwhelms me! I will retire from the ſeat of war! I will implore heaven for your happineſs and ſafety; and though I cannot, may not fight for you, my arm ſhall never more be raiſed againſt you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no leſs happy, in being the author of their happineſs, than his goodneſs and bounty had made them.—I here quitted the ſervice of this great prince, being in the purſe which he gave to the ſtranger. The happineſs which this pair experienced, in being thus unexpectedly reſtored to each other, is not to be expreſſed; the delicacy of their love being as much too ſublime for deſcription, as the ſenſuality of other ſcenes was beneath it. In a word; they wanted, they wiſhed for nothing more: and to ſecure the poſſeſſion of what they enjoyed, they reſolved to go and live privately with his brother, an eccleſiaſtic in Vienna, till the war ſhould be at an end, and they might with ſafety return to their own country. This reſolution was ſoon taken; they applied for paſſports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of ſuch a ſcene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance, I ſee you are deſirous that I ſhould give you a character of him; but I muſt not gratify your curioſity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greateſt of men; but humanity is too frail to be

Digitized by Google

able to form any definitive judgment of his paſt, for his future life. Succeſs may elevate; misfortune may ſour his mind, and ſo overthrow that equality of it, which now raiſes him almoſt above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly to be relied on; ſo that his dependance is ſolely on the attachment of his own ſubjects, on the ſtrength of his own ſoul.

What will be the event of his fortune, is not permitted me to conjecture; This only I muſt ſay, that if he falls, it had been better for his country, for Europe in general, that he had never been born; as his ſtruggles will exhauſt their ſtrength, and leave them an eaſy prey to a foe, (the Turk) whoſe ſilence makes them not apprehenſive of him, but who laughs in his heart to ſee them thus do his work, and deſtroy againſt each other the forces, which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations, which already groan under his yoke. A deſign which he certainly meditates, and will not loſe a moment to put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL arrives in VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in* ENGLAND. *He is sent to* PERU. *He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.*

IF the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress: but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing in the fields and high roads, of wounds, sickness, famine; and every various kind of misery, which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to Vienna, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed, from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace.

The moment I saw this ecclesiastic, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in Peru. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised a curiosity to know the cause of his removal, from a place where I thought I

Digitized by Google

had left him settled, in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

It was not long before this curiosity was gratified; for the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to walk in his garden, and sitting down under a tree, on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus.

'It is many years, my dearest brother, since I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various have been the climates I have gone through! various the vicissitudes of my fortune since that day; from despair to exultation! from royal affluence and power, to apprehension of perishing by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not at my words; I will explain them to you in a short view of my life, which it is necessary I should give you, to prepare you for the participation of secrets, in which your assistance may be employed, in establishing the most extensive and firm power, which ever yet was raised on this globe.—You may remember, though you were then very young, that the representation of the Jesuit, to whose care our education was committed, made such an impression upon me, that in despite of my father's threats and intreaties, I renounced my patrimony in your favour, and taking only a small sum of money to defray the expences of my journey, went directly to Rome with my tutor, where I readily obtained admission into the Society of Jesus, as soon as I had gone through the usual preparatory forms of education.

'Nothing remarkable happened to me during the first years of my being professed, my studies engrossing my whole time and attention, in which I made such a proficiency, that the general of the order, thought it proper to send me into the world, in the service of the society.

'The

Digitized by Google

'The first stage of my mission was to England, whither I went to counteract the poison which was dispensing against us, by an apostate of our order, who under the pretence of employing his abilities in the service of the society, had been admitted to all the libraries, and suffered to take extracts from all the records of the church. But no sooner had he made such a collection, as he thought sufficient for his purpose, than he fled to England, his native country, where, renouncing his vows and religion, he turned the weapons which had been entrusted in his hands for the defence of the church, against her, employing the abstracts he had made to the defamation of the character, and subversion of the power, of the Holy See.

'My success in this my first negociation, (for in defiance of truth, reason, conscience, and common sense, by plausible insinuations, by forged certificates, or, which was the same thing, by certificates from people who would certify any thing in their own favour, against a man who attacked the very fundamentals of their power; by bribery, subornation, perjury and every kind of artifice, I, in a great measure, defeated his design, and overturned the authority of his work) my success, I say, in this difficult undertaking, for he had gone out from among ourselves, and was versed in our whole science, encouraged the order to continue me in that mission, but in an higher office.

'The laws, religion, and government of the nation, were now the objects assigned to my attacks, in which I laboured with various success for some years, in every character which human volubility could assume. I was a quaker; a methodist; a deist; I wrote for the ministry, or against the government, as the prevailing hu-

Digitized by Google

mour of the day promised attention to my writings. The sea which flows around that island, being not more unsteady than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they by every breath of popular rumour.

'I proceeded thus for some time, with various success, till happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissention between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both; the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight, from an ignominious death, which the resentment of those, whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to.

'My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order. On the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.

'I was therefore sent, the next year, to what is called the Spanish world, but is really the Jesuits heaven in America, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution.——When I came there, I found things in a forwardness, too great for their foundation; the eagerness of some of our people, hurrying on events, before proper preparation had ensured their success. In short, they were ready to revolt from Spain and Portugal, before they had made provisions to support themselves in such an attempt. They wanted European officers,

Digitized by Google

ficers, soldiers, arms and ammunition, for on the natives there is no dependence; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part, were at peace with all the world, and consequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them.

'I therefore counselled them to moderate their zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a more favourable minute should make their success more probable. But they would not hearken to my advice, but attributed it to envy, or want of resolution, on which I left them to their own ill-fortune, and hasted home to provide a remedy, for evils which I could not prevent.'

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular design.*

'THE event has confirmed my opinion; by striking too soon, the blow has been ineffectual. However things, however disconcerted by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and care may yet repair the effects of their folly.

'In this cause I now labour, in concert with others of my brethren, in every court of Europe; and I have the satisfaction to think that we have a prospect of success. The only obstacle that retards us at present, is the difficulty of making the courts of Spain and Portugal enter into the war against England. Could we

Digitized by Google bring-

bring this to bear, our work will be eaſy. The mighty naval power of England, would not eaſily prevent their ſending over forces to oppreſs us, before we can eſtabliſh our power, but will alſo aſſiſt us to carry on the war, to ſhare in the ſpoil, and diſtreſs their enemies.

'But while the preſent kings are on the thrones of thoſe kingdoms, it will ſcarcely be poſſible to bring our deſigns to perfection, they are ſo utterly averſe to hazarding the conſequences of a war, with a nation from whoſe alliance they receive ſuch advantages.—The firſt thing therefore which we do muſt be to remove them. The former has already ſwallowed his death, though the proceſs will be ſo ſlow as to eſcape ſuſpicion: with the other, ſuch caution is not neceſſary, nor is there time for it.

'The arm is already lifted againſt him, for a ſtroke that will terrify the world.

'When theſe obſtacles are removed, the execution of our deſigns will meet with no further delay. The ſucceſſors to theſe princes we have ſecured ſuch an influence on, that we can work them to whatever we pleaſe, and have already poiſoned their minds with prejudices againſt England*.

'To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience to command our forces, is the next object of our care. Shall I candidly own to you that ſuch a length of time, and multiplicity of affairs, had almoſt obliterated all the remembrance of my family; but the moment I heard your name mentioned, with the reſpect due to

* The conduct of the preſent king of SPAIN, hitherto ſhews that the Jeſuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at leaſt.

your

Digitized by Google

your merits in the present war, a flood of infant fondness melted my heart, and tears of tenderest joy acknowledged that I had a brother. I immediately gave notice to our general, and by his order, am empowered to treat thus with you.

'On my engagement for your fidelity, for your abilities are known to be far superior to any that shall oppose you, I am commissioned to offer you the supreme command of all our forces, in this great undertaking. With what joy I make this offer, the pleasure that you would feel in serving your brother can best enable you to judge.

'Though I will tell you farther, that mine is raised higher than common feelings can convey a notion of. I have hitherto unfolded only the general design of our order, in which I am but a party, though a principal and material one. But shall I tell you also, that my designs terminate not with their's: as your command will make you master of all their force; and as power is the consequence of that, you will be able to confer it where you please; or indeed rather to retain it in your own hands, while I shall only ease you of the trouble of conducting and establishing the policy of an infant state.

'This was my motive for writing to you so pressingly, to come to me to Vienna. This is the end which I have been labouring for all my life. I am advanced in years, and shall never marry to beget an heir; you are young and will have many. Assist me therefore to acquire a throne, which must descend to your posterity: a throne, which by holding it at first, as under the sovereignty of the order, will soon be established by them, even beyond their own power to shake.

'I have

Digitized by Google

'I have now unboſomed myſelf to my brother, with all the confidence of ſo near an alliance. You will perhaps wonder at my openneſs, with one whom I have not ſeen ſince he was a child. But I know your character in life: and, above all, I know myſelf ſafe from being betrayed, becauſe the information would not be received.

'Conſider, therefore, whether you will embrace this offer! whether you will reign in a ſplendour that would dazzle the eyes of the greateſt prince in Europe, or live here in ſlavery and dependence! The alternative will not admit a moment's heſitation. I ſee you yield. I will acquaint our general with it; you and your wife ſhall remain here with me, till the proper time for all our departure comes, which will depend on circumſtances not yet ſettled. In the mean time we ſhall have an opportunity of conferring on theſe ſubjects together, and preparing all things for our undertaking, in a manner that ſhall enſure ſucceſs.'

Though my maſter made no reply to this propoſal, that teſtified the leaſt diſapprobation of it, I could eaſily ſee that many parts of the ſcheme affected him with the ſtrongeſt abhorrence; at the ſame time that the offer of royalty, was a temptation that ſhook his reſolution, and almoſt vanquiſhed his virtue.

His brother ſaw the conflict in his ſoul with pleaſure: had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he ſhould have withdrawn his confidence from ſuch a depravity of ſoul; and the ſtruggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice is loſt.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.*

THE Jesuit the next evening resumed the conversation, and to remove every doubt of success that might deter his brother from joining in his designs, proceeded thus.

'My brother, (said he) there is nothing so disgusting to a rational man, as the mistakes and blunders which passion, prejudice, pride and ignorance, produce in the conduct of all the courts in the world, even ours at Rome not being quite exempt from them, though the freest of all others. As for this of Vienna, it is at present a scene, where every absurd, every destructive passion rules.—Among these must you seek for the sources of the present war, that lays all Germany waste. Female pride, piqued by some slighting expressions, from one esteemed inferior in rank, and stimulated by a desire of recovering by surprise, what had been yielded, or rather extorted by treaty, influenced this sagacious court, in conjunction with that of Saxony, to form designs against the king of Bulgaria: but the vigilance of that monarch prevented their designs, of which he had timely notice; and before their schemes were ripe for execution, he boldly attacked them, and so anticipated the blow meditated against him.

'So daring a step surprised all Europe, and influenced many

Bulgaria e Prussia

Digitized by Google

many who were unacquainted with the motives of it, to take part againſt him, while more did it for private advantage.—Of theſe France was the firſt; who concluding a league with her ancient enemy, in deſpight of family animoſity, has entered into a war, that ſeems not to concern her at all; nor indeed does it in the obvious conſequences of it, but ſhe has farther deſigns in view, and in return for the aſſiſtance ſhe gives to cruſh this prince, is to receive from the houſe of Auſtria theſe dominions in the Netherlands, which have coſt the greateſt part of Europe ſuch deluges of blood, for above a century, to keep out of her hands: while this court, inattentive to the conſequences that muſt attend France's getting poſſeſſion of theſe long-conteſted places, has blindly, baſely, entered into a league with a family, that has been labouring her ruin for ſo many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all the ſtates who have ſupported her in them. The other nations who have acceded to this alliance, have acted from motives merely mercenary in the firſt view, fighting for the pay promiſed them by the Imperial and French courts, the latter of whom has ſtretched her generoſity ſo far, as to undertake ſupporting her new ally with money, as well as men.

'But it is not improbable, that they may all be diſappointed, and the king of Bulgaria not only eſcape the ruin meditated againſt him, but alſo retort it on the machinators; one of the principal of whom, the Saxon, has already had abundant cauſe to repent of his undertaking. As for this court, it now fights *pro aris et focis*, as may be ſaid; for if that hero is victorious, nothing leſs is to be expected here, than the total loſs of the imperial dignity, of whoſe authority there want not many

Digitized by Google

many instances of the most flagrant abuse, to vindicate such a revolution.

'But of all the effects of this unnatural combination, there is not one more base, than the ingratitude with which this court has behaved to that of England, whose blood and treasure have often supported it against the power of France, when every other human assistance had deserted it; and established it in its present grandeur, almost at the price of its own ruin.—But now all those benefits are forgot, and because England will not tamely look on, (if not perhaps assist) to see the fabric, which she has erected at so vast an expence, overturned to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince allied to her by blood and interest, sacrificed to avarice and pride, all her former services are held as cancelled, and herself treated with the rancour of the greatest enemy.

'While England thus supports her character of generosity, and acts with prudence: the Dutch, as if infatuated, stand quietly to see the barrier, which cost themselves even so much in erecting for their defence, thus given away to every power against whom it was erected; and who, they cannot be insensible, means nothing less than their ruin, as soon as it can strike the blow to effect. But such is the degeneracy of that people, from every sentiment of virtue, public and private, that they will not give up the opportunity of present gain, to save their state from so evident, so imminent ruin; vainly, perhaps, expecting that England will still pursue the schemes of knight-errantry, which have so long made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours, while they themselves looked on almost as if unconcerned in the event; and will be moved by the cries of

Digitized by Google

of the diſtreſſed ſtates, to remedy the miſtakes, and repair the loſſes of their High Mightineſſes.

'While every other ſtate in Europe is thus employed, Spain and Portugal enjoy all the advantages of peace, prudently taking no part in a war which does not in the leaſt concern them. Of theſe, the former, like the old lion in the fable, is only terrible to ignorant apprehenſion, on account of what it has been, and is now pacific and harmleſs, becauſe it no longer has the power of doing harm. Senſible of this weakneſs, it ſleeps in the ſhadow of a mighty name, and mixes not in diſputes which muſt only draw it into difficulties, without any proſpect of advantage to engage it in the attempt. But it muſt not be let to enjoy this ſtate of tranquillity, ſo contrary to our deſigns any longer; and as the preſent government there is determined to perſiſt in the meaſures that ſupport it, it muſt be overturned to make way for thoſe who will be more obedient to our advice.

'A method which we muſt alſo purſue with Portugal; for though its ſtrength is almoſt beneath the rank of an independent, much leſs a royal ſtate, yet upon the account of its wealth, which might hire forces to oppreſs us, it muſt be worked up to take the ſame ſtep, and break with England, as I have ſaid before, to which it has already made large advances, by ſeveral moſt unjuſt and injudicious encroachments on the trade of that nation.

'As for the war between France and England, it ariſes ſolely from the contradiction between the intereſts of the two nations, which nature has ſet in an oppoſition impoſſible to be reconciled. But the ſeat of this war is ſo remote from hence, that it would have

Digitized by Google

no influence on the affairs of Europe, did not the ſucceſſes of the Engliſh prevent France from giving the aſſiſtance that was expected, and might be effectual to the deſigns of this court, for they have ſo abſolutely ruined her trade, that ſhe is no longer able to fulfil her engagements with Ruſſia particularly, and the ſeveral courts of Germany, whom ſhe undertook to pay for fighting the quarrel of her ally; ſo that the former, who had no other motive but the money for entering into the war at firſt, will of courſe, and the latter muſt of neceſſity, deſert that cauſe; not having any internal ſupport of their own, ſince this has failed them. Indeed the Ruſſians, finding all the mighty promiſes which were made them vaniſh into air, begin to be ſick of their bargain already, and long again for the ſolid advantages of their alliance with England. As for this court, it is now making its laſt effort, and if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other reſource, than ſhamefully to receive law from a Prince, upon whom it made ſo unjuſt an attempt.'

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

'THIS ſhort but diſtinct view of the preſent ſituation of the affairs of Europe, muſt convince you, that a general peace muſt ſoon be concluded, the parties that would, not being able to continue the war much longer; and therefore we muſt be ſpeedy in the execu-

Digitized by Google tion

tion of our designs, or the opportunity will be lost; for it would be impossible to make even the pride of Spain, or the avarice of Portugal, take the measures we want, at a time when England is disengaged from any other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to shew you, that our designs are not rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest knowledge and insight into things. This must remove every scruple that may arise from doubt of success.—But there is one thing more which must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this is to evince the justice of it, and of the means designed to accomplish its success.—

'Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules, obtruded by design upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break them with impunity. —Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness, by every means within his power: this is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion, by which the wise few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance and subjection.

'But that it is really the truth, and as such made the rule of action, by all the states and princes in the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by any one who has considered the system of policy and government, which are, and ever have been established by them.

'For if it was not an undoubted maxim that power constitutes the rules of justice, how inconsistent would be the actions of all mankind! How could a state devise

Digitized by Google

vise laws to punish a man with death, who goes into his neighbour's field and steals his ox, and at the same time sends armies to invade, spoil, and depopulate the territories of their neighbours? How could a poor pirate be hanged for robbing a single ship, and fleets immediately after sent avowedly to destroy the whole trade of the same nation? If a state of war is alledged, that is the very imposition of which I spoke. Every man has as good a natural right to declare war with his neighbour, as the state he lives in has with another state; and every right that is natural, is an usurpation, and void. This is the true philosophy of life, stripped of the idle dreams of enthusiasm, and selfish misrepresentations of design.

'As for religion, look over the whole race of mankind, and try if you can find one who practises what he professes; this is an incontestable proof, that none believe it; as it is also, that there is no necessity they should, else would the want of faith and obedience be punished, by that power which is thought to enjoin them; whereas on the contrary, it is always most successful, as it affords means which those restraints forbid. I observed, that in the beginning of the conversation on this subject, you seemed shocked at my mentioning the necessity of removing the persons who opposed our designs, and particularly when I said the Spaniard had swallowed his death. But this is all prejudice, and want of extending your view beyond the surface of things.

'For how much better is the method we take, of striking the single person against whom our design is levelled, than that pursued, not only without reproach, but even encouraged by applause, of involving the in-

Digitized by Google

nocent with the guilty, (innocent I mean in respect to us) and laying waſte whole nations, to bring a prince to death? How much better would it have been for this court, to have removed the king of Bulgaria by poiſon, or a dagger, than to have deſtroyed millions, as they had done in the purſuit of his death, by this deſtructive war? This is demonſtration! This is conviction to him who dares open his eyes to ſee it! Judge now of our undertaking by this invariable ſyſtem, and ſhew me one objection to it.'

This long diſſertation was not delivered at one time; it was the ſubſtance of many converſations, by which the Jeſuit ſo wrought upon his brother, that he reſigned himſelf wholly to his diſpoſal, and entered ſincerely into his deſigns. The whole objection he made (and that was not urged againſt him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the ſociety, the prejudice of education being ſtill ſo ſtrong with him, that he could not yet abſtract things ſo nicely, as to conſider aſſaſſination in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this ſtate of ſpeculation about a week, for my maſter never ſtirred out, as he made ſickneſs his excuſe for quitting the ſervice, when his brother having occaſion for ſome money to ſend to Liſbon, on the grand deſign, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that ſervice; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.—I now changed my maſter again, and ſet out for Liſbon, in the poſſeſſion of one of the ſociety, who was to deliver us to a particular perſon there.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL proposes a political scheme, that will never take place, to settle the peace of GERMANY. *A short view of the war between the* FRENCH *and* ENGLISH, *with the motives of the former for transferring the seat of it into* GERMANY. *Insidious ambition meets a just disappointment.*

IN so complicated an undertaking, there necessarily must be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whose motions depends the success of the whole. The person, by whom I was sent to Lisbon, was not to go directly thither; but to take a large circuit, and call at several places in his way, to see that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy should not defeat the design a second time.

It is not necessary to recount all the circumstances of this tour, which, for the most part, were no more than the common occurrences upon such occasions; I shall therefore take notice only of such few, as for their singularity and importance may deserve attention. As to the secret motive of the journey (for that alledged was only to inspect, as usual, into the private concerns of the order) it has been already so well explained, that it is sufficient to say that every thing exceeded expectation, and gave the strongest assurance of success.

As the war had overspread all Germany, it was impossible for my master to avoid falling in with some of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave

Digitized by Google

him no concern: He was bleſſed with one of thoſe ready geniuſes, that can put on any appearance ſo naturally, as to deceive ſuſpicion itſelf; beſide that, he had paſſports under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The firſt event worth remark that occurred to us, (for the nature of war, and its operations in general, have been ſufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of Bulgaria, into which my maſter entered in the character of a Jewiſh agent. This army was compoſed of the forces of ſeveral of the ſmaller German ſtates, (who are hired by the Engliſh to defend their own liberties) a ſmall number of Bulgarians, and a conſiderable body of Engliſh troops.

You are ſurpriſed to hear, that people ſhould require to be paid to fight for themſelves, in ſo intereſting a cauſe; but ſo it is, and ſo it will continue to be, while a number of little ſovereigns aſſume the ſtate, and live in the luxury of the greateſt kings; for as their own revenues are inſufficient to ſupport the expence, they will be ready to ſell themſelves to the firſt that offers for an immediate ſupply, without looking forward to, or regarding the conſequences of ſuch inconſiderate, ſuch wretched venality. They have indeed this excuſe, which the general depravity of mankind ſeems to juſtify their alledging, that as their ruin would involve greater ſtates in ſome inconveniencies, they find theſe will rather ſubmit to this groſs impoſition, than ſuffer them to be ſwallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Baſe as ſuch a proſtitution of principle muſt appear, it has been ſo ſucceſsfully practiſed, (and this not by

power

Digitized by Google

poorer princes alone; the Auſtrians and Spaniards occaſionally, and the Dutch conſtantly availing themſelves of it) that England in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her ſituation, ſhe ſeemed exempt by heaven, in every war that has diſtracted Europe for ſome ages, to an expence of blood and treaſure, which is already ſeverely felt, and muſt, if purſued much farther, involve it in the very ruin it thus ſtrives to avert.

There is one, and only one remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itſelf ſhall work its own redreſs; a period, that to human foreſight ſeems not far diſtant at preſent. This is taking away the power of thoſe petty tyrants who diſgrace the name of ſovereigns, and uniting their territories into one ſtate, of ſtrength ſufficient to ſupport itſelf. For while thoſe princes have any power left, they will, conſiſtently with their preſent ſyſtems of policy, oppoſe this; but the manner in which they have conducted themſelves in this preſent war, if not ſpeedily altered, will ſo effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to reſiſt, but muſt paſſively ſubmit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their ſupport: an event as much to be deſired by their own immediate ſubjects, as by the other ſtates, which thus ſuffer by their abſurd iniquitous conduct; as the ſevereſt form of one government, is preferable to the capricious rule of ſeveral tyrants, whoſe poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the moſt of their wretched people, without any regard to the eſtabliſhed rules of juſtice, or even the common rights of humanity. The uſual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of Germany.

Digitized by Google

many, which they make so great a noise about, is of no weight; that boasted liberty being at present no more than the power of those sovereigns, to treat their subjects as they please, with impunity, the restraining of which, within just bounds, would really be establishing, not overturning the liberty of mankind.

As to the war in which the English were at this time engaged, it was not to be ascribed solely to this cause. The insatiable ambition of the French had prompted them to strive for the enlargement of their territories in America, where they already possessed an hundred times more than they were able to make any use of. The possessions of the English in that part of the globe were also uselessly extensive; however, the boundaries having been settled between them, usurpations were not to be tolerated, consistently with the honour of the state: beside, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might in time possibly be extended, to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between those powerful and jealous neighbours, the seat of which was properly transferred by the English, to the place in which the attack was made upon them; where the superiority of their naval force gave them such advantages, that they not only recovered the places which had been taken from them, but also absolutely overturned the French power in those boundless regions, and pursued their conquests in every other part of the world, where the French had made settlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impossible for the French to recover these losses directly, and the ambition and avarice which first gave occasion to the war was now strengthened by pride,

to

Digitized by Google

to prevent their making the conceſſions, on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the ſeat of the war into Germany, and attacked certain powers there, with whom England was ſo inſeparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their aſſiſtance, in expectation of having all their own loſſes reſtored in return for theſe territories, if they could get poſſeſſion of them, which the number of their own land forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal Germans, gave them hope of accompliſhing; a ſcheme not ill founded, as every motive of honour and juſtice obliged the Engliſh to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus ſolely on their account. As the French, at the ſame time that they made this attack, had alſo entered into the confederacy againſt the king of Bulgaria, as has been already mentioned, this neceſſarily cemented the alliance between him and England ſtill cloſer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could poſſibly ſpare, to the army raiſed by the Engliſh upon this indiſpenſible occaſion; from which conduct he received the immediate advantage, that this army engaged the attention of the French, and prevented their joining their forces to the number of his enemies; beſide a conſiderable aſſiſtance in money, to enable him to ſupport his own troops.

It was neceſſary for me to give you this ſhort explanation of the nature of this war, though ſuch digreſſions are contrary to my deſign and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences I am going to relate to you.

The army, through which my maſter was obliged to paſs, as I have ſaid, though paid by England, and the flower of it compoſed of Britons, was commanded by a German

Digitized by Google

German general, in disgraceful acknowledgment of the want of military merit, equal to such a charge in the natives: though to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the English, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the German commander in chief.

Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial than the inconvenience they were meant to prevent. Accustomed to live in the most luxurious plenty and ease, and valuing themselves upon the riches of their country, which supported the whole army, the English found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the German troops, with which they were joined, with contempt; who, in return, affected to despise their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country, to give such impressions of them, as prevented the people from bringing in provisions, with that care and cheerfulness which their prompt and generous payment deserved; by which means they suffered the inconveniencies of scarcity and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though such feuds among the men threatened the most dangerous consequences, those whose authority ought to put a stop to them, were far from striving to restore that harmony which alone could give success to their designs. The commander in chief, either overlooked as beneath his notice, or was prevented by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of these misunderstandings; and the English commander, ambitious probably of the supreme

Digitized by Google

preme command, which he imagined he might eaſily obtain, if he could make the other ſufficiently obnoxious to the Engliſh, inflamed them by every artifice he could uſe.

Nor did he ſtop here; whenever he was ſummoned in conſequence of his high ſtation, for he was ſecond in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war; he made it his conſtant practice to contradict whatever was propoſed by the commander, and to treat all his ſchemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himſelf in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful ſpeaker, and perfectly verſed in the theory of war; whereas the commander was a thoughtful, reſerved man, of few words, whoſe whole life had been ſpent in action, and who could more eaſily have executed than explained his deſigns.

The conſequences of this diſagreement were very detrimental while it laſted, and muſt in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the German, without ever attempting to diſcuſs the affair with his worthy antagoniſt, written directly to the Britiſh ſovereign, to inform him, that he was conſtantly ſo oppoſed in all his deſigns by the Engliſh general, that it was impoſſible for him to do any thing of moment; wherefore he deſired, either that he might have leave to reſign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous oppoſition; concluding his letter with theſe remarkable words.—'Though in a multitude of counſellors there is ſaid to be much ſafety; yet in the operations of war, if many are privy to the councils which direct them, there never can be that ſecrecy, agreement,

Digitized by Google

greement, and diſpatch, which are indiſpenſibly neceſſary to ſucceſs.'—

The monarch, who was no ſtranger to the captious and unquiet diſpoſition of the Engliſh general, was ſenſible of the juſtice of the German's complaint, and immediately removed the cauſe of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war, as ſhould appear beſt to his own private judgment, without conſulting with, or being liable to be oppoſed by any other perſon.

It may be thought, that the entire removal of the Engliſh general would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the Engliſh government made this not quite ſo proper; as he was deſcended from one of the moſt illuſtrious and powerful families of the kingdom, and a member of the ſenate, in which his talent for ſpeaking gave him ſuch weight, that it was judged beſt, to avoid giving him cauſe for exerting his abilities, in oppoſition to the meaſures of the government, by removing him from an employment which he had ſolicited with all his power and intereſt; eſpecially as the immenſe expence of this army began to make the people uneaſy, and ready to receive any impreſſion againſt it. But the event ſhewed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made uſe of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the German general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his ſchemes, without ever conſulting any perſon, or ever communicating the leaſt hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he ſent his orders with the peremptory preciſion of an abſolute ſovereign. This was a ſevere ſtroke upon the Engliſh

Digitized by Google

general, who had been accuſtomed to canvaſs the very commands of his king, and therefore could badly brook ſuch ſubordination, to a perſon whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his underſtanding. However, as it was in vain to diſpute, he obeyed in ſullen ſilence, reſolving to ſeize the firſt opportunity of defeating his meaſures, ſince he could no longer diſconcert his councils; and to take hold of the leaſt miſcarriage, to attack him in the Britiſh ſenate at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not but he ſhould be able to repreſent things in ſuch a light as to have him removed from the command, which muſt of courſe devolve upon himſelf.

This account my maſter received from a Jeſuit the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the ſociety the more effectually with the French king, and ſecure his intereſt and protection, ſhould any unforeſeen accident defeat their deſign, had entered into the ſervice of the Engliſh general, as his valet de chambre, for the better opportunity of diſcovering the ſchemes of the allies, which he gave conſtant intelligence of to their enemies.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid scheme disconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to satisfy ENGLISH *soldiers. The disgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his sovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again disappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.*

THE very morning after my master's arrival in the camp, an event happened that astonished all Europe. The French army was so greatly superior to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely upon the defensive; nor had his consummate experience, and indefatigable assiduity, been able to prevent their taking several advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat, that seemed to threaten the loss of the country he was to defend. But through all these difficulties he persisted steadily, in his own plan, and preserved his attention cool and ready, to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly that morning, upon notice of some motions of the enemy, that indicated a design of attacking him, he ordered a small, but select body of forces, almost all of them English, to advance towards them, and receive their charge; whilst he should make a proper disposition of the rest of his army, to give the enemy battle, or make a secure retreat, as he should see expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of those few brave troops soon changed the face of the affair; for not content with repelling the attack of the main body of

Digitized by Google

of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them, in their turn, which they did with such irresistable valour, that the French were thrown into confusion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have said before, that the transactions in a battle are so complicated and confounded with each other, that it is impossible to reduce them into the regularity of a satisfactory description; I shall, therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than just as it concerns the conduct of the English general, which I had a sufficient opportunity of observing, my master having placed himself near his person, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march towards the enemy, he sent to the English general, who commanded all the horse in that wing, to advance and sustain them. It is impossible to describe his situation, when a messenger from the general informed him, that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry under his command to their assistance. Surprise, and resentment, at such a measure's being taken, without his having the least previous notice of it, almost deprived him of his reason; but he recovered himself in a moment, and drawing his sword, with an air of indignation and discontent, was just preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another messenger arrived, and delivered them, but with some variation.

This the general instantly perceived, and resolved to take the advantage of, to justify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accomplish his scheme of defeating

Digitized by Google

fenting the measures of his commander, without any regard to the consequences that must attend such a conduct. Accordingly, instead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the messengers about this difference in their orders, and finding each positive in those he delivered, he coolly determined to go himself to the general for an explanation of them; by trifling away the critical moment, in which manner he expected that the part of the allied army which was engaged would be beaten for want of a proper and timely support, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and saving the whole army from a defeat, and the pleasure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his designs to them in proper time.

Such a scheme was but too likely to succeed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops whom he thus designed to have sacrificed to his ambition and resentment, disappointed it beyond all human probability, as I have observed before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext to abandon them to ruin.

The situation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than described. The cool distant reception he met with, gave him notice of the storm which was ready to burst over his head: and he saw that the scheme he had laid so deeply, to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accusations which he had intended to

Digitized by Google

bring

bring againſt his general, would now recoil upon him with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the general next morning publicly paſſed an implicite cenſure on his conduct, which he ſaw received with ſuch univerſal approbation, that he thought it proper to reſign his command, for fear of perſonal inſult from the incenſed ſoldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the intereſt of his family, and his own eloquence and addreſs, would vindicate his character, at leaſt, if not ſtill accompliſh his deſigns againſt the general.

Though I loſt ſight of him at this time, yet as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to this whole affair, I think it better, and leſs troubleſome to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The firſt conſtruction that was put upon his conduct was that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper, to thoſe under his command, gave no ſmall weight to, from this generally juſt maxim, that the cruel are always cowards; and which many inſignificant parts of his former conduct were alleaged to confirm; but I have ſhewn, that it ſprung from another, much leſs juſtifiable cauſe; I ſay, leſs juſtifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for, than for his being born blind or lame; but ſuch a ſcheme as his, was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackeſt circumſtances.

The firſt conſequence of his quitting the army, was a perfect harmony between the Engliſh and Germans; the glory they had acquired, upon this occaſion, raiſing the ſpirits of the former ſo high, that they thought no

Digitized by Google

more of the inconveniencies they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved: and entered into friendship with their fellow soldiers, as if there had never been any jealousy between them; who on the other hand were so struck with their gallant behaviour, and so sensible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accused them of improper delicacy, or strove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country as before. But what completed the happiness of the English, was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirst for glory, under their present commander, by giving them the post of honour upon all occasions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which they esteemed a sufficient recompence for the severest fatigues and danger: an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always opposed their being exposed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater consequence than the rest of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not do any service.

As soon as the late general arrived in England, his sovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many lucrative and honourable employments, and dismissed him his service; an instance of clemency, which few other princes would have shewn, and which regard to the merits of his illustrious ancestors alone procured for him.

But so far was he from having a proper sense of this lenity, or acquiescing in the sentence of his sovereign, that he loudly asserted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the assurance of conscious innocence.

This

Digitized by Google

This was the higheſt inſult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his juſtice, and queſtioned his power in the tendereſt point; however he ſcorned to take any advantage of it, but waving every perſonal reſentment, condeſcended to grant this trial demanded; but with this expreſs declaration, that as it was at the inſtance of the party, and without any legal neceſſity, he ſhould abide by the ſentence of his judges, be what it would, as he would never interfere farther. But this declaration was of little weight, for the general was well adviſed, before he ſolicited the trial, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a Briton ſubject to military law, by which he muſt be tried; and this exemption was the real reaſon of his being ſo eager for a trial.

But though his life might be out of danger by this ſubterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character, beyond all poſſibility of recovery; as upon the moſt impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious conſequences of it, by the loſs of ſo favourable an opportunity, of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and perhaps putting an end to the war by that means, appeared ſo plainly, that the juſtice of his being diſmiſſed the ſervice was not only aſſerted, but he was alſo declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell a ſecond time a victim to his own ſchemes. As to the victory, which had been the immediate cauſe of his ruin, as ſoon as the circumſtances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general loſt the glory, which in the firſt emotions of joy and admiration, had been ſo laviſhly

heaped

Digitized by Google

heaped upon him for it; and it was justly ascribed to accident, as human foresight could not possibly have formed any plan, for such an improbable instance of bravery, as that which obtained it.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* BRUSSELS. *The great source of Jesuitical influence. Anecdote of a man of pleasure, and a lady of fashion. Their history concluded in character.*

AS soon as the confusion of such an event was a little over; and my master thought he could travel in safety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I said, he had borne there, pursued his journey to Brussels in his own, where he was to receive further instructions: for though the great design was carried on by every member of the society, yet the real secret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whose orders the rest obeyed with an implicit exactness, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the subjects of any sovereign upon earth, since the days of the old man of the mountain.

It was some time before these instructions arrived; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, insignificant court, by my master's intimacy with the confessor of the Governor, who, beside the advantage of that character to gain information, was himself a man of pleasure, in the most extensive sense of the phrase, and utterly free from every restraint of principle that could oppose its gratification;

Digitized by Google

ſcation; though he had the addreſs to maintain the dignity of his ſtation, by his ſecrecy, and regard to propriety of appearance.

There is nothing that contributes ſo much to the influence which the Jeſuits poſſeſs over the minds of people, as the knowledge of the ſecret hiſtory of their lives. To acquire this they ſtop at nothing; they aſſume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every ſcene of vicious pleaſure, where reſerve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without diſguiſe. Such an opportunity of information therefore was not to be miſſed. Accordingly, the evening after my maſter's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themſelves in a convenient ſituation to ſee all the company, and make their remarks, without danger of being over-heard; ſuch as was merely political I ſhall omit, as I am ſick of ſuch a ſtupid ſubject, and only take notice of thoſe which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.

'Obſerve that little mean looking, ill-formed perſon, (ſaid the confeſſor, continuing a converſation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) who acts as maſter of the ceremonies. You ſee his feeble frame is quite worn out with debauchery, and he nods over the grave in anticipated old age; yet ſtill he affects an air of levity and youth, and ſtrives to inflame others by his diſcourſes, to vices, which he is no longer able to participate himſelf: but this is all grimace, and he aſſumes the appearance of gaiety, to hide the gloomy diſcontent and remorſe that prey upon his heart.'

'There is ſomething ſo particular in the ſtory of this man, that it may be worth while to give you a ſhort ſketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring country,

Digitized by Google

country, where his father, from the lowest state of poverty, amassed such wealth in trade, that his vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, to hide the meanness of his original. There is something so absurdly wrong in purchased nobility, that it always turns the heads of the purchasers, perhaps in just retribution, for so flagrant an abuse of an institution, meant as a reward for merit. The ennobled man lived not to shew the truth of this observation, but his sons abundantly made up for that; the elder lavishing his wealth on every kind of expensive vanity, and the younger, the person you see, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as if vice and folly were the prerogatives of their honour.

'In the course of a life of pleasure, he contracted an acquaintance with that lady, whom you see at the upper end of the room. Though nature had never meant him for a man of intrigue, and debauchery had exhausted even the little powers she gave, he thought it would have been inconsistent with his character of a man of pleasure, not to commence an affair of gallantry with so desirable a person. Accordingly, as she happened to be married, he directly cultivated an intimacy with her husband, into whose unguarded confidence he so far insinuated himself, as to receive many acts of friendship from him. To a man who had any sense of honour, or honesty, this would have been an irresistable reason for desisting from his base design: but he was above such vulgar restraints, and genteelly took the opportunity of the husband's friendship, to debauch the virtue of the wife.

'Nothing but the most abandoned profligacy in the woman could have given success to such an attempt, as

Digitized by Google

the

the husband exceeded the paramour in every natural endowment of mind and person, beyond every degree of comparison; but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for: it will loath the most exquisite delicacies, and fate itself on garbage.

'They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiscretion betrayed them. It is impossible to describe the astonishment and rage of the injured husband at the discovery! Had it been possible, he would have doubted his senses, which were witnesses to his disgrace. In the first emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge which his superior strength amply put it in his power; but a moment's reflection shewed him the folly of such an action, and determined him to take the safer, and more severe revenge of the law.

'Accordingly he withdrew without being perceived by them, and bringing some of the servants to testify their crimes, as soon as he had secured the proof necessary to obtain his satisfaction, entered the room in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them, that it would be proper for them to chuse another scene for their pleasure beside his house, retired and left them to their meditations.

'This conduct convinced them of his design, and that they had not a moment to lose, to avoid some of the most disagreeable consequences of it: as soon therefore as they recovered from the first impressions of their astonishment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement, for fear of a pursuit, quitted the territories of the state as soon as possible they could.

'But they might have spared themselves that trouble;

Digitized by Google

ble; the revenge which the husband sought, was of another nature: he directly instituted a suit at law against them, by which, as he had a sufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his wife, and such damages from the violater of his bed, as made it impossible for him ever to return to his country, without he designed to languish out the rest of his days in a prison.

'The lovers, in the mean time, were far from being happy in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each other. Variety, and the mystery of intrigue, were all that tempted them to the correspondence at first; and now, that these were lost, reflection opened their eyes to the consequences of their folly, and as soon as the divorce gave them liberty, they married, to preserve the appearance of a passion they never felt, and obtain a support for their families, which they could not have expected on any other terms.

'When this was done, and that necessity removed, the aversion which they had long entertained broke out in the most violent manner. They lived in a state of eternal warfare, in which the wife threw off all regard to decency, even so far as to take advantage of her superior strength, and frequently beat her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his upper-lip! the third day of their happy marriage, he received that mark of her rage, from the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat out two of his teeth, whose place he now supplies with artificial ones.

'But the viciousness of her inclination, which first brought him into this wretched situation, released him from it sooner than he deserved. They had fixed their residence here; where the prince soon happened to take

Digitized by Google

a liking to her, the first overture of which she eagerly embraced; and completed the infamy of her character, by quitting her second husband, to become his mistress; in which station you behold her at present.

'Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial retaliation upon the husband, for his own base crime, he was insensible of it; and instead of taking advantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some place where his shame was not known, meanly accepted of the employment in which you now see him, and submitted to be the slave of her vice and insolence.

'But though his hatred for her, and passion for the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him brave, the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful monitor of guilt, has awakened his conscience to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and raised a remorse that wastes his life, though he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice in the noise of vanity and vice.'

CHAP. XIV.

The confessor entertains CHRYSAL*'s master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.*

MY master was beginning to make some obvious reflections on this account, but his friend soon diverted his attention to another object, 'Observe' (said he, pointing to a person who bore all the external marks

Digitized by Google

of nobility in his habit and appearance) 'a striking proof of the insignificence of being born to wealth and honours! Who, that sees that despicable figure which this man makes here, a voluntary exile from his own country, where his rank and fortune placed him in the most exalted and advantageous light, can ever throw away a moment's thought on heaping up riches, or obtaining honours to perpetuate his name, and aggrandize his family, the folly and profusion of a single member of which may thus disappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggravation of his own degeneracy and reproach?

'In a rank scarce inferior to that of a sovereign, and possessed of a fortune sufficient to support it, with dignity to himself, and benefit to the community, did this man enter into life; but a few years of the dissipation of what is falsely called a life of pleasure, distressed his fortune, and debased his principles to such a degree, that he was obliged, and not ashamed, to have recourse to the mean method of a mercenary marriage to retrieve his affairs, and enable him to support the external appearance of his character.

'The constant consequences of such marriages might be sufficient to open the eyes of the unhappy victims of them to such a dangerous folly; but vanity possesses so absolute empire over the female heart, that nothing can prevent the gratification of it.

'The female whom this person pitched upon as proper for his purpose, by her immense wealth, was destitute of every charm of mind and person to attract or preserve love and esteem. But few are sensible of their own deficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them. On his making the first overture to her, all her real friends

Digitized by Google

friends took the alarm; they drew his character in proper colours; they shewed her that necessity, not inclination, was the motive of his addresses, and they laid the inevitable consequences of a connection with such a person before her in the strongest light: but all was in vain! Her heart was fixed upon rank and precedence, and so she could obtain them, she left the rest to chance.

'Accordingly, as she was absolutely her own mistress, the match was soon made to the present satisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune to pay his debts, and pursue his pleasures; and she rode in a coach with coronets, and was called her Grace.

'But this mutual happiness did not last long; the moment he got possession of her fortune, all his wishes were fulfilled; and as he had nothing farther to expect, he did not think it necessary for him to continue any appearance of love, or even complaisance, for an object really disagreeable to him. Accordingly the very morning after his marriage, he set out upon a party of pleasure with some of his former companions; and left the bride by herself, to receive the compliments, and go through the farce usual upon such occasions.

'Though such behaviour must appear base and ungenerous to the last degree, yet she had no right to complain of it; as she could not expect any other from his known character and motives for marriage; she therefore put the best face on the matter, and whether from intoxication at her elevation, or indifference to him, seemed to be insensible of the slight, and went through the ceremony and parade with all the appearance of pleasure and content, leaving him

Digitized by Google

to purſue his own inclinations, without moleſtation or complaint.

'But this calm did not hold long. As ſoon as her new dignity loſt the charms of novelty, nature awoke as from a dream, and convinced her, that ſomething more than empty ſhow was neceſſary to human happineſs: but alas! this conviction came too late; and all her expoſtulations were as ineffectual to induce the tenderneſs or eſteem of her huſband, as thoſe of her friends had been with her to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary, they turned his indifference into averſion, and made him treat her with indignity and contempt, inſulting her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that had prompted her to ſacrifice her fortune for a bare title.

'Hard as ſuch treatment was to be ſubmitted to, ſhe had no redreſs; but was obliged to bear it in ſilence, without even the poor conſolation of compaſſion to mitigate her ſufferings. At length, a farther aggravation of her wrongs gave her the pleaſure of revenge, by driving him again into the diſtreſſes from which her folly had relieved him.

'In the purſuit of pleaſure, to which he had ſacrificed his character and fortune, he never had the excuſe of a refined taſte, or particular paſſion, to palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example of his companions, or was a ſlave to every groſs impulſe of his own caprice, without the leaſt notion of delicacy, or even decency to direct him. As he was ſtrolling alone about his own houſe one unhappy evening, when he had no company to divert his thoughts, he happened, juſt as it grew dark, to overhear two perſons, a male and female, in earneſt converſation. Curioſity prompted him

Digitized by Google

him to liſten, he ſoon perceived that love was the ſubject of their diſcourſe, in which the man, whom by his voice he knew to be one of his huntſman's helpers, was ſo ſucceſsful, that he perſuaded the fair one to promiſe him a meeting, half an hour after, in the dog-kennel.

'Though the place of aſſignation might have deterred any perſon, whoſe ſenſes as well as his inclinations were not totally debauched, from attempting to ſupplant the happy lover, the novelty of ſuch an adventure made his lordſhip overlook that, and reſolve to ſupply his dog-boy's place. Accordingly he retired unperceived, and going into the ſtables, ordered him to be called, and ſent him directly on a meſſage ſome miles off, without giving him an opportunity of letting his miſtreſs know any thing of the matter.

'As ſoon as the time appointed drew near, his lordſhip went to the agreeable ſcene, where the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As he was about the dog-boy's ſize, and the place was quite dark, ſhe never perceived the change put upon her, but laviſhed her careſſes upon him with the greateſt tenderneſs, vowing never more to have any correſpondence with the pantry-boy or ſcullion, who it ſeems were the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be always conſtant to him alone; and took her leave of him, with a promiſe to meet him there at the ſame time next evening.

'Diſguſting as every circumſtance of this affair ſhould have been, the oddity of it, with the pleaſure of ſupplanting another, even ſo mean a perſon, and in ſo unworthy an object, made him determine to be punctual to her appointment. But then the difficulty was, how to prevent his rival's traverſing his deſign, for his de-

Digitized by Google

licacy was not in the leaſt alarmed at the thought of his participating her favours. He was alſo at a loſs to know who the obliging female might be, for the darkneſs that concealed him was equally favourable to her; and he was a ſtranger to her voice, nor did he care to aſk any queſtions, as that would betray his own impoſture, and bring on an explanation that he did not deſire, both as his greateſt pleaſure was in the cheat, and the diſcovery might be attended with circumſtances he ſhould chuſe to avoid, in caſe the female was diſagreeable to him.

'To obviate all theſe inconveniences, he ordered his rival to attend him the very moment he returned, when he gave him a letter to carry that inſtant to a gentleman who lived about twenty miles off, with directions to be back early next day with an anſwer. This he ſaid aloud, in the hearing of all his ſervants, that if his miſtreſs ſhould happen to hear of her lover's being ſent from home, ſhe might alſo have reaſon to expect his return time enough to keep the appointment; but to prevent this, he had deſired the perſon to whom he wrote, to keep the meſſenger, as for an anſwer of the letter, two or three days, in which time he concluded, he himſelf ſhould be tired of his amour.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XV.

Continued: His lordſhip's ſcheme to fling his rival unluckily diſappointed. A diſagreeable meeting occaſions ſtrange diſcoveries. Woman never at a loſs. Law often ſpoils ſport.

'PLEASED with the ſagacity of this ſcheme, he waited for the next evening with an impatience that he did not often feel on ſuch occaſions; but an unlucky accident diſappointed his deſigns. The gentleman, to whom he wrote the letter, happened not to be at home, nor was he expected for a day or two; wherefore, as his lord had ordered him to make haſte back, he left the letter, and returned without any delay, perhaps not more in obedience to his orders, than from his impatience to retrieve the diſappointment his deſires had met by his abſence the evening before.

'As ſoon as he alighted, therefore, his firſt care was to find out his miſtreſs, to tell her the reaſon of his diſappointing her the evening before, and to make a new aſſignation for that; but what was their mutual ſurpriſe, when they came to compare notes! As he inſiſted on his not having attended the appointment, ſhe flew into a rage, and accuſed him of having betrayed her baſely to ſome of his companions; and as ſhe poſitively aſſerted her having met ſome perſon there, he accuſed her, with equal warmth, of inconſtancy, and ſacrificing him to ſome of his rivals, on whom he vowed the ſevereſt vengeance, if he ſhould ever find him out.

'As this altercation was not carried on with much delicacy on either ſide, it ſoon produced an abſolute rupture,

Digitized by Google

rupture between the lovers, who separated with sentiments for each other, very different from those with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his resentment cooled a little, recollected that it might be proper to let his lord know the success of his message, who sent for him into his presence directly; and being freed from his apprehensions, by hearing that he was but that moment returned, ordered him to set out again instantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman, wherever he was, and not return without an answer.

'His orders were so urgent, that the fellow did not dare to make the least delay; but fortune, that seemed resolved to cross his lordship's designs, contrived it so that he met the gentleman on his road, without having called at home, or received the letter that had been left for him. Upon the dog-boy's informing him of it, he concluded, as he was much nearer to his lordship's than to his own house, that it was the readiest way for him to wait upon him directly, without minding to send the man for the letter. Accordingly he bade him turn back and ride on before him, to acquaint his lordship of his coming.

'Though it was late when he had set out the second time, he had made such haste, that he reached home just at the time of his lordship's appointment; when it unluckily came into his head that his perfidious mistress might possibly have taken the advantage of his absence to make another assignation in his dog-kennel, the first thing he did, the moment he dismounted from his horse, was to go there, to see if any one had invaded his territories.

'Nor was his suspicion disappointed; for the fair one

Digitized by Google

one was so uneasy to unravel the mystery of the adventure the evening before, that she punctually attended her appointment, where she had not waited many minutes before her unknown lover arrived. The scene of their meeting was so dark, that it was impossible for either of them to know the other. However, she soon thought of a method to remedy this, which was to purloin something out of his pockets, by which she might discover who he was, without betraying herself; for she soon found, that he knew no more of her than she did of him.

'She had just executed her design, and was taking her leave of her lover, when his jealous rival came upon them unawares, and overhearing their expressions of fondness, was so enraged, that he resolved to take immediate revenge: accordingly he approached them without any noise, and turning up the butt end of his whip, aimed a stroke so unluckily, though at a venture, that it felled his lordship to the ground. The female, who instantly guessed what was the matter, took advantage of the darkness to make her escape, which she happily effected without any disaster; the dog-boy stumbling over his fallen adversary, the first step he advanced to pursue her.

'His lordship, half recovered from the blow, laid hold of his antagonist, who grappling with him directly, a battle ensued, in which nobility was so rudely handled, that his lordship was obliged to declare himself, and cry out for quarter. It is easy to conceive the confusion of the conqueror upon this discovery; he instantly strove to disengage himself, and make his escape; but his lordship held him fast, promising to forgive him, though, if he would have the discretion never

to

Digitized by Google

to mention a syllable of the affair, and inform him who the female was with whom he had made the affignation to meet in this place the evening before.

'These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore eternal secrecy, and readily told his lordship, that the girl was no other than the kitchen maid's daughter, who served as a scullion wench under her mother.

'This discovery of his mistress's quality was almost as disagreeable to his lordship, as the effects of the dog-boy's jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation, and stealing secretly into the house, that he might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his own apartment by himself, to change his cloaths, and wash off the blood and dirt, with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

'As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rung for his valet de chambre, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid's daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master's taste, was not in the least surprised at his choice of such an object, but obeyed him directly.

'The fortunate female, who had found out the quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear she might be suspected of having designedly occasioned the outrage his lordship had lately met: however, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on, and went trembling and blushing, in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship's commands.

'If he had been surprised at the discovery of her condition,

Digitized by Google

condition, he was much more agreeably so at the sight of her: for though she was far from being handsome, there was something in her face, which from her extreme youth, and a glow of health, that her confusion heightened not a little, struck his fancy in an uncommon manner. He therefore, without giving her the least hint of what had happened, as he imagined she knew nothing of him, made no ceremony of proposing love to her. But young as she was, she had too much woman in her soul to comply so easily, though there was nothing she desired more ardently. Accordingly she refused his lordship with the most respectful modesty, and on his urging his request farther, threw herself at his feet, in a flood of tears, and begged him to have compassion on her friendless youth and innocence.

'Such behaviour would have made him doubt the dog-boy's information, did not the sound of her voice convince him she was the person. He therefore laughed at her artifice, and told her that as soon as the farce was ended, he should expect another answer, as he knew she had granted to others the favour he asked of her.

'This convinced her that he had discovered her, and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her scheme, to accomplish the design she had formed, of establishing a lasting interest in his affections. Accordingly, upon saying this, she embraced his knees, in a seeming agony of distress, and conjuring him to have mercy on her folly, owned that she had transgressed with one, and one only, who had made such an impression upon her heart, that though she had taken him for another, and knew not even who he was, she had made a vow never to repeat her folly with any other.

'The

Digitized by Google

'The candour of this confeſſion, the greateſt part of which he thought he knew to be true, completed her conqueſt over him. He raiſed her from the ground, and embracing her tenderly, diſcovered himſelf to her. The conſequence is obvious. She immediately appeared in public as his miſtreſs, and had the addreſs to accommodate herſelf ſo entirely to his capriees, that ſhe ſoon gained the abſolute maſtery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off, of courſe, as an offence to her ſight, though not without a conſiderable gratuity to purchaſe his ſilence; but that was impoſſible: the moment he left the houſe, he looked upon himſelf as freed from the neceſſity of concealing it any longer, and made it the common ſubject of his diſcourſe, till it became as publicly known as his lordſhip's name.

'This happened juſt as his affairs became again ſo diſtreſſed, that he was forced to with-hold the ſupport he had allowed his wife. She therefore directly took the advantage of it, to ſue him for a ſeparate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. The fact was too flagrant to be denied, and his infatuation was ſuch, that he would not remove the cauſe, to avoid the conſequence of the ſuit, but choſe to quit his native country, and come here with his miſtreſs, to live in the diſeſteem and contempt you ſee him treated with, on the poor pittance of his fortune, which the law allows him for his ſupport; the reſt, much the greater part of it, being aſſigned for the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his debts.'

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVI.

GERYSAL's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT *man.*

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however a disagreeable, picture of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of the man in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance, struck me with horror; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and embracing me with the tenderness of long parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures they had met with since they had seen each other.

In the account given by my master, there were none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that, for the

Digitized by Google

curiosity of such a character, I'll give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts, too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole as the clearingness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

'You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend, (said the stranger to my master) to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you; but because I had not arrived at any fixed period to make a proper pause at, and therefore, an imperfect account could give you but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed: I am here settled in a situation, which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world, at this late season of my life. One caution only I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.——

'I was born in France, of poor parents, who were scarce able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic, before I had experience enough to see the folly of such a step; but my stay here was not long: to a man of sense, the obligation of a vow ceases with the motive that induced him to take it. I made my escape from the convent: and as I was destitute of money to support me, and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the world to be able to live without it, was driven by necessity to enlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found

Digitized by Google

found that I had not gained by the change, the slavery of a soldier's life being still more intolerable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse to my former expedient for relief, and deserted the very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random upon the world, without any particular point to direct my course to; but this did not discourage me: I had boldly thrown off the shackles which foolish man has forged for himself, to prevent his rising in life, and regulated my conduct solely by my convenience. This gave me a superiority over the rest of mankind, which I never failed to avail myself of. I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and soon found abundant opportunities of turning them to my advantage.

'For some years, I lived a life of ramble, in the course of which I met with many adventures.——At length, I thought my own country too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I went to Spain, where I expected an ample harvest, from the ignorance and superstition of the people: but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and almost starved me into repentance of my expedition. However, I proceeded to Madrid, where the credulity of a countryman of my own made me amends for the reserve of the natives. He not only relieved my immediate wants, which were too pressing to be borne, but also intrusted into my hands some valuable materials for a literary work, from which he expected both reputation and profit. But I disappointed his hopes; for being tired of Spain, I took the first opportunity of going to try my fortune in some other country, and carried all his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his confidence. I had before experienced the inconvenience of depending upon charity,

Digitized by Google

in a country where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of nature. I therefore thought it proper to take all the money and valuable effects in his possession, to defray the expences of my journey. As to the distress this might throw him into, I never regarded that a moment, no more than I did his being my countryman. I despised the narrowness of thought, that made such accidental circumstances of any weight, when they clashed with my own particular designs; and I esteemed the lesson I had taught him, to be more cautious whom he placed his confidence in, a sufficient recompence for his loss ——

'From Spain I directed my course to Germany, where the political knowledge I acquired from my late friend's papers made me so much taken notice of, that after some time not disagreeably spent among the great, I was recommended to the prime minister and favourite of the king of Poland, as a proper person to be intrusted with the education of his only son. Not to disgrace this character, I assumed a fictitious name and title, and gave out, that I had been obliged to leave my own country for an affair of honour. My employment gave me frequent opportunities of conversing with the father of my pupil, to whom I displayed my skill in politics, to such advantage, that I was soon admitted into his esteem and confidence. In this intercourse I had the honour of starting the first hint of that project which has since kindled the present war in Germany, and will immortalize his name (for he has had the ungenerous meanness to assume it to himself) to all ages.

'Such a situation was sufficient to satisfy the desires of any other man; but my ambition knew no bounds: I thought my patron did not reward my merit as it deserved;

Digitized by Google

ſerved; and in revenge, I reſolved to work his ruin. For this purpoſe, I entered into a correſpondence with ſeveral noblemen, who were his enemies, and taking advantage of the opportunities his confidence gave me, of ſeeing his papers, copied ſome, and counterfeited others that I thought neceſſary to my deſign, which was no leſs than to raiſe a civil war, in which the miniſter ſhould be ſacrificed, and his maſter dethroned. But juſt as my plot was ripe for execution, it was diſcovered, and I hurried from a palace to a priſon, where I was condemned to languiſh out the reſt of my days; my life being ſpared in compliance with a fooliſh delicacy of my patron's, who thought it ſhould be a diſgrace to him, to have his ſon's tutor hanged.

'When I had lain here ſome time, an happy thought procured me my liberty. I wrote a moſt penitential letter to the Pope's nuncio, in which I diſcovered my true name, and my having fled from my vows; and pretending a thorough ſenſe of my guilt, and deſire of returning to my order, begged his interceſſion in my favour. My ſcheme ſucceeded, he claimed me as an eccleſiaſtic, and the king, whoſe mind was too intent on greater matters to think of me, readily complied. I was accordingly releaſed from my priſon; but inſtead of being ſet abſolutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was ſent under a guard of eccleſiaſtics to Rome, where all the favour I could obtain, was to be ordered back to my convent.

'This was a great diſappointment to me; but I was obliged to ſubmit. I accordingly ſet out, guarded as before, but determined to take the firſt opportunity of making my eſcape; which I at length effected, after many vain attempts.

Digitized by Google

'To frustrate the pursuit of my guards, I fled into Switzerland, where the name of liberty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I pleased. The first thing I did there was to abjure my religion, and profess theirs, to conciliate their good opinion. This was no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon all religion with equal indifference. As I had no money, I immediately commenced author. But though I gained reputation, my profits were so inconsiderable, that I was obliged to have recourse to other methods for my support, some of which happening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to leave their dominions with circumstances of disgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind when I tell you, that the affair they made so great a noise about, was only my denying a debt I was unable to pay, and the creditor did not even want.

'There were some other particulars indeed of my conduct, which would have met with a severe fate, had I not taken prudent care to obviate it. I had entered into an intimacy with a person of some fortune, who had an agreeable wife. The connections of the wife are always made with a view to some particular end. I had more than one in this acquaintance; the supply of my necessities by the generosity of the husband, and the gratification of my pleasure by the enjoyment of the wife.—I succeeded in both; but was prevented by an accident from enjoying my success long. The husband surprised us one day, in a situation that did not admit of doubt. He drew his sword, to have revenged his wrongs with my death; but I disappointed his design by presenting a pistol at his head, which I always carried about me, for fear of accidents. Upon this he ran out

Digitized by Google

out of the house in a kind of frenzy. I saw the delicacy of my situation, and that my safety depended upon a proper use of that moment. The wife had swooned away at the first sight of her husband. I ran and fetched a glass of water, as if to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which I never went without, for any such emergency, that delivered her for ever from all fear of her husband's resentment. I had many reasons for doing this. It was in her power to make discoveries to her husband, which I did not chuse; beside, as the suspicion of her death would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that a good way to escape his revenge. I then quitted the house without being perceived. All things happened as I could wish. The husband was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ignominious death for the murder of his wife; and all his effects were confiscated to the state. It is true, I did not entirely escape suspicion! He had laid open all he knew of the affair by letter to his friends; but though they believed him, he had no evidence to support his charge, so that I despised his impotent accusations.

'From Switzerland I once more turned my face to Germany, where my name was so famous for my political knowledge, that a war being just ready to break out, I received considerable offers from most of the parties concerned, to engage me in their service; but though I refused none, I resolved not to engage myself absolutely to any, till I could know which might prove most advantageous to me.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, *where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.*

'AS England was likely to bear a considerable part in the war, I thought it proper to go over, and found the inclinations of the ministry there also. The riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country have long made it be esteemed the inheritance of needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my abilities in so fertile a soil, inspired me with an ardour I had never felt before. I already grasped all the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself as the oracle of the people, and the terror of the ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence with a pension, that should enable me to spend the rest of my days wherever I liked, with dignity and ease.

'Full of these flattering hopes I arrived in London, where I soon found, that just as the nation I had formed of the people in general might be, the government would not take the bait I had prepared for them: and treated me and my proposals with equal contempt. This threw me into the necessity of prostituting the abilities which I fondly hoped would have been employed in embroiling nations to the deception of individuals, for the sup-

port

Digitized by Google

port of life; for all the wealth I was master of consisted solely in the projects of my brain.

'My success in this underplot made me some amends for the miscarriage of the other; I no sooner fixed my habitation than I was crowded to by tradesmen of all kinds, to solicit my custom for things which I had not the least probability of being ever able to pay for. But that gave me no concern, I accepted their offers, to such an amount, that I was immediately able to procure considerable sums of money, for other occasions, by the sale of commodities, which so far from having occasion for, I scarcely knew the use of.

'Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all reserve, and gave a loose to every passion which luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm; never reflecting that the day would soon come when my inability to pay my present debts, would not only put a stop to these artificial resources, but also probably plunge me into the horrors of a gaol for life. I professed myself a man of pleasure! I dressed, gamed, and intrigued with people of the first rank; and for some time was so intoxicated as to forget my first purpose in coming over, and think I could support this life for ever. Not that I was ever so intent upon my pleasures as to miss any opportunity of procuring the means immediately necessary to obtain them. On the contrary, the moment I threw off my designs upon the government, I doubled my application to turn the follies of particulars to my own advantage; stopping at nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of the world, to accomplish my designs.

'Such a life must necessarily involve me in a variety of adventures, many of which, 'tis true, I got not so smoothly

Digitized by Google

smoothly over as I could wish; but I had learned philosophy enough to take the bad with the good, without repining at what it was not in my power to redress.

'It would be endless to enter into a particular detail of every thing I did and suffered in the course of this life; I shall therefore only just mention one or two affairs, which may serve to give you some notion of the rest.

'As I particularly valued myself upon my literary character, there was no kind of acquaintance I was fonder of cultivating than with men of letters; for which I had also a farther motive, that as their attention to books generally made them strangers to the ways of men, they were most easily to be made the property of any mercenary designs.

'On both these accounts, I had taken lodgings in the house of a clergyman, who, beside the character of a man of learning, was also reputed to be in easy circumstances. I soon found that he was a person exactly fitted for my designs, and therefore lost no time in making a proper impression on him. The first step towards acquiring confidence is to place it yourself. I immediately made him my banker, lodging every sum of money I won at play, or raised by the means I mentioned before, in his hands. As my success made these sums very considerable at first, he conceived an opinion of my being a person of consequence and fortune, above my appearance. This inspired him with such respect for me, that if at any time, I even hinted an occasion for more than I had in his hands, he not only offered to supply me, but even looked upon my acceptance as an honour. To confirm him in this way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his offers, when I had no occasion,

Digitized by Google

tion, only that the punctuality of my payment might make him ſtill the readier, whenever I ſhould.

'Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail myſelf of this ſcheme. A bad run at play ſtripped me of all my money, and my tradeſmen brought in their bills, ſo that my former reſources were at an end. In this difficulty, I applied to my landlord, who readily ſupplied me with all the money in his poſſeſſion; and that not being ſufficient, borrowed as much more as he could, till my remittances ſhould arrive from my eſtate.

'This ſupply might have extricated me from the difficulties of the preſent moment. But I was awoke from my golden dreams, and ſaw that this was the laſt money I could any ways expect to raiſe, as my practices began to be ſuſpected, and every body had taken the alarm againſt me; ſo that if I parted with it, I ſhould only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord would ſoon expect to be paid alſo. I therefore reſolved to ſerve all my creditors alike, and go back to Germany with the money in my poſſeſſion, leaving them to curſe their credulity, and be more cautious for the future.

'As I had ſtill a conſiderable quantity of valuable effects in my poſſeſſion, I knew it would be impoſſible to remove them without giving the alarm to my landlord; and I could not think of leaving them in his hands, though they were far ſhort of the debt I owed him. In this dilemma, my ready genius prompted a ſcheme, that would not only ſecure me from him, but alſo gain me time to prepare for my decampment, with more convenience. Upon my firſt coming to his houſe, I had contrived, by taking the impreſſions in wax, to get falſe keys to all his locks. This is a piece of precaution, which

Digitized by Google

which no man of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my scheme, the morning after I had received the money from him, and before I was to pay it away by appointment, I took the opportunity, while he was at church, to convey into his closet several things of value, my property, which I could clearly prove; taking away, at the same time, the obligations which I had given him for the money he had lent me, which his confidence in my honour had prevented his taking the precaution of having witnesses to.

'As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a magistrate, before whom I made oath of my being robbed of a large sum of money, and many of my most valuable effects, among which I particularly named the things I had left in his closet, and required an authority to apprehend my landlord, and search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he had stolen them, having caught him several times coming out of my apartments in evident confusion, and at times when my being absent deprived him of every honest reason of going into them; and this charge I had confirmed by the testimony of my valet de chambre, and another person whom I had properly prepared.

'Though the execution of sentence is not quite so sudden in England as in Turkey, an accusation of this kind, however groundless, is, in many respects, not much less dreadful; the harpies of the law never loosing their hold, till they have devoured every thing in his possession. The warrant I demanded was readily granted for this reason; and away I resolutely went, in company with the officers to execute it. We found my landlord, in the security of innocence, in his parlour, waiting for my coming in to dinner. It is im-

Digitized by Google

possible to express his astonishment, when they laid hold of him like a thief, and told him it was upon my accusation. All the resolution and presence of mind I was master of, were requisite to bear me through the scene! At first he was unable to speak a word; which the candour of his accusers did not fail to construe, as a silent acknowledgment of his guilt; but recovering himself for a few moments, he first raised his eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon me, gave me a look that almost froze the blood in my veins; but never deigned to speak a word to me.

'He then addressed himself to the officers, and mildly desired that they would execute their duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the sacred character he bore, till a proof of his guilt should make him appear unworthy of the function of it.

'Such behaviour had an effect not to be described upon all that were present. The very officers forgot their hardened nature for a moment; and the tear of pity fell from eyes that never wept before at human misery. Even I began to feel the foolish infection, and was obliged to charm up other passions to prevent my betraying myself, though my ruin was at stake. Accordingly I raised my voice, and with a stern accent, commanded the officers to do their duty, and search the house before his accomplices should have time to convey away the things we came in quest of. This word put an end to a compassion that was contrary to their nature, and they proceeded to their business with their usual keenness, though still with respect, till they came to search his closet; where the sight of things which I had sworn to have been stolen from me, ap-

Digitized by Google

peared so plain a proof of his guilt, that they treated him with all the indignity of the vilest malefactor.

'Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto preserved a steadiness of temper that seemed superior to the power of fortune; but at this sight his resolution failed him. He fell upon his knees, and raising his hands and eyes to heaven; 'Just God (said he) thy will be done! thou knowest my innocence, and art able to defend me!——And wilt defend me' (said he) rising and recovering his former spirits.

'In the mean time, I seemed encouraged by this success to hope for the recovery of the money which I pretended to have lost also, and ceased not to urge the officers to make the strictest search. But this was not necessary; they ransacked every place, and tossed about every thing that was too large for them to convey away, till they made his whole house a scene of desolation. They then dragged him before the magistrate, where the finding of the things gave such weight to the charge, which I positively swore against him, that he was on the verge of being hurried to prison, and would certainly have suffered an ignominious death, had it not been for some unlucky prevarication in my valet de chambre's evidence. This, with some suspicions that were suggested against my own character, by the pawn-broker to whom I had sold the goods I took up from my tradesmen, and who unfortunately happened to be present, gave the affair such a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to bail, till his innocence or guilt should be proved by a public trial.

'But it was far from my intention to wait for this. The moment I left the magistrate, I went to the house of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered my effects to

Digitized by Google

to be removed before, where I resolved to prepare for my departure with the utmost expedition. As to my creditors, when they called upon me the next morning, as I had appointed, for their money, I told them the story of my having been robbed the day before by my landlord; and therefore, that they must wait till I should receive another remittance from my own country; and though I saw that few of them believed me, or were inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no concern, as the habitation of my friend was in a place privileged from the immediate power of the law.

'However, it was impossible to be easy in such a situation, where every eye that saw me reproached me with what I had done! I therefore took the first opportunity of going off, in which I was so successful as to elude the vigilance of my pursuers, and escape to Holland, where I had the vexation to learn that half of my scheme was disappointed, my landlord being discharged without trial, for want of my appearing to prosecute him; but though he escaped death, his affairs were so effectually ruined by the loss of the money he lent, and had procured for me, and the expence and damage he suffered by my accusation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge to the savages in America, from the power of his more savage creditors.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and suffers a second shipwreck in ENGLAND. He that will not when he may, *&c.* —*It is often better to play a poor game, than stand out.* CHRYSAL *arrives at* LISBON.

I NO sooner arrived in Holland, the general rendezvous of politicians, than I reassumed that character once more, and that with such success, that the minister of a power in alliance with England conceived such an opinion of my abilities, as made him offer to recommend me to that court, for an employment of the highest consequence in one of the principal courts of Germany.

'Though I was sensible that my return to England must be attended with disagreeable, if not dangerous circumstances, from the general prejudices that were entertained there against me, I boldly resolved to accept of his offer: the former, which could consist only in impotent marks of dislike I disregarded; and the latter, I judged my recommendation would enable me to defeat. Accordingly I set out with the utmost privacy, and was safe in London, before my leaving Holland was even suspected by those who would have lain in wait for me.

'The very morning after my arrival, I waited upon the minister to whom I was recommended with my letters, who received me very politely, and upon the credit of the character given to him of me, entered into a familiar conversation on several subjects of intricacy and

Digitized by Google

and importance, in which I supported the character he had received of me so well, that he dismissed me with an assurance of his protection and favour.

'I now thought myself secure of my hopes; but the pleasure of this thought was of a very short continuance. The very next morning I received a message from the minister, to attend him directly, which you may think I obeyed in the highest spirits. Instead of the affability with which I expected to be received upon my advancing to him, he darted a look at me that seemed designed to search my very soul. After viewing me steadily thus, for some moments, 'You are recommended to me (said he) as a man of abilities; and such I have found you to be; but you have imposed upon the person who recommended you, and concealed your real character from him, or he would never have entertained so favourable an opinion of such an abandoned wretch!——But I have unravelled the mystery of your iniquities, and am guarded against your wiles.—Your crimes call aloud for vengeance, and the stroke of fate hangs over your head; but in hopes you may repent and amend your life, and in respect to the recommendation you brought (of which I cannot give a stronger testimony than this) I will give you an opportunity to escape, for this time, the ruin that threatens you. Fly this country directly! if you are found in this city an hour hence, or make the least delay in any part of the kingdom, (and all your steps are watched) you are to expect no favour or protection. And that you should not plead inability to obey this injunction, take this purse of gold, and let me never see your face more.'

'I need not tell you the effect this speech had upon me! I took the purse, and retired, without making

Digitized by Google

any reply; nor did I close my eyes in sleep till I had bid adieu to that inhospitable shore.

'On my return I went to wait upon my former patron, but was denied admission, and ordered never to go there any more: the account of my disgrace in England having, as I learned afterwards, been transmitted to him in the very ship that brought me over.

'Though these miscarriages mortified my pride, they did not deject my spirit. The gold given me by the English minister, enabled me to support myself in a state of independence for some time; during which, I successively offered to accept every proposal that I had formerly rejected; but I had missed my opportunity, and was now rejected myself in my turn. At length, when I was almost reduced to despair, the employment I hold here was offered to me, which, though far beneath my former hopes, I thought it not prudent to refuse; especially as it opened to me an opportunity of venting my rage with impunity, upon all who had ever offended me. I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, honour, and justice, by inventing false news, to support the exhausted spirits of the people; —by defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a colour to the iniquitous designs of the latter; and by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppression, cruelty, and deceit, with the specious colours of authority, justice, and religion.'

'To a man who retained any of the prejudices of the world, and did not examine things in the simplicity of nature, such a task must be most disagreeable. But to me, all things are indifferent, as I know all things are alike.'

Here my master's friend concluded his history; the enormity

Digitized by Google

enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himself, though, as I have told you before, I have omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview, my master left Brussels, and proceeded on his journey to Lisbon, during the remainder of which nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL comes at LISBON into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. CHRYSAL's master is at length taken up; and he changes his service.

IF I was formerly surprised at meeting a Peruvian acquaintance at Vienna, I was no less so when I found that the person to whom he sent me in Lisbon was the very captain, of whose miraculous conversion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man chosen for the great attempt, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair having raised their opinion of him so high, as to make them think him the only proper person for this.

I did not remain long in a state of speculation in the possession of this master; the orders which were brought along with me, were all that was waited for to accelerate the execution of the design. Accordingly the blow was struck a few nights after, but in the confusion inseparable from such attempts, without effect.

The

Digitized by Google

The king was ſhot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love aſſignation, at ſome diſtance from his palace, by my maſter, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuſs loaded with ſmall balls at him, through the back of the coach.

By an inſtantaneous ſtupefaction of fear, which is often taken for reſolution and preſence of mind, the king fell down in the coach and ſpoke not a word, which made my maſter conclude the work done, and ſo prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confuſion the next morning, when he found that the king, though ſeverely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was loſt, nor was it probable that another ſhould offer till it would be too late. However, he attended the event ſo far ſafe, that no one could endanger his ſafety by betraying him, there being no perſon there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for ſecrets of this importance are always entruſted to as few as poſſible.

While he thus calmly looked on as an unconcerned ſpectator, it is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction that reigned all over the city, where every perſon ſuſpected his neighbour, and was almoſt afraid to converſe with his brother, for fear of being ſuſpected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the perſon guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the moſt myſterious ſilence was obſerved, and all converſation on the ſubject diſcouraged. This was thought to be the moſt probable way of coming to the knowledge of ſo dark an affair; as their ſpies could thereby mix with the people with leſs ſuſpicion, and make their obſervation with the greater certainty, when they ſhould be off their guard.

Not

Digitized by Google

Not that they were at a loſs to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was ſtruck was the difficulty to find out, that ſo they might found their proceedings on an evidence of juſtice; for the Jeſuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reaſon for ſuſpecting them of this fact was, that upon the miſcarriage of their premature attempt in America, the king was ſo incenſed againſt the whole ſociety, that he diſmiſſed them from the direction of his conſcience, and every other place and employment about his perſon or court.

Such an indignity he was ſenſible muſt alarm the reſentment of a ſet of men, not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts; he had therefore taken every precaution to guard againſt them, as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only againſt diſturbance in the ſtate, for of ſuch an attempt as this he could not ſuſpect them.

While things hung in this ſuſpence, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to deſcribe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the Dutch; to that let us add poverty, pride, ſuperſtition, bigotry, and its inſeparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you ſome idea of the preſent Portugueze. A people of whom it is hard to ſay, whether to abſtracted ſpeculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the ſtruggle between their follies and vices is ſo unremitted and ſo ſtrong.

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to aſhes by lightning, and before they had recovered

Digitized by Google

covered from the conſternation, which ſuch a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their American dominions being ſwallowed by an earthquake.

Such ſignal inſtances of the wrath of heaven might have been expected, to alarm their conſciences to look for the cauſes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But inſtead of that, the firſt proof they gave of coming to their reaſon (or I ſhould rather ſay of coming to themſelves, for reaſon it was not) after their fright, was to attribute theſe misfortunes to a relaxation in ſuperſtitious ſeverity, and to demand as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whoſe good nature had given effectual relief to their diſtreſs.

At length, after a calm ſo long, that people began to think the ſtorm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burſt, but alſo the whole nation beſide.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The perſon with whom he had been, was deſcended from the firſt, and related or allied to all the greateſt families in his kingdom.

In a country whoſe characteriſtics are pride and revenge, ſuch an intercourſe muſt be dangerous, even to royalty, as the honour of all thoſe families ſeemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly a rumour of her being with child, having extorted ſome inadvertent, illative, general menaces from ſome of her relations, as the fact was really ſo, the conſcious apprehenſions of the king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reaſon of them, he made a pretence of the aſſaſſination;

Digitized by Google

tion; the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger, arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses which he had suffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected; they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof been given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations, and strained inferences, of those who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such scenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I shall therefore return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair, the miscarriage of his attempt having made it necessary for him to disburse the money among which I came to him, and by that means continued me so long in his possession.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been, to see

Digitized by Google

ſee him an unconcerned ſpectator of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the juſtice of their puniſhment.

But his triumph was not long; ſecret and inſcrutable as the Jeſuits imagined they had laid their ſchemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, ſuch information of them as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and juſtice, to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmoſt ſeverity. A ſtep that could not have been taken on ſuch grounds, while theſe nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in ſpirits to exert the influence of their prejudice in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to ſtrike at the root of eccleſiaſtical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke under which they had ſo long blindly groaned, that at length they thought it juſt and natural.

Accordingly, in the midſt of his ſecurity, my maſter was ſeized, and hurried away to a priſon, with the reſt of his brethren; and all his papers and effects ſecured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little uſe, as it is an invariable rule with all the order, never to keep any by them whoſe diſcovery may endanger them, or their deſigns; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this diſſipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who in his ſearch took an opportunity to ſecrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquiſition with a banker, for fear of detection.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest AMINADAB. *Adventures of his son. He enters into business at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new service.*

I WAS scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his compting-house, the sight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprize of my master less: 'O God of Abraham (said he) is not that the son of my brother Aminadab? Where hast thou been? And where is thy father? He has been sought from Dan to Beersheba! His spoiling that Gentile, that Egyptian woman, has been a joy to all the brethren! but I am amazed to see thee here; I hope he is safe out of the reach of every Christian power.'

'O brother of my father, (replied the son of Aminadab) mention not that unhappy affair, if thou hast not a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with grief. My father is dead!—'But where is the wealth, nephew?' (interrupted my master hastily) where is the wealth?—'All lost! all buried with him in the bottom of the ocean,' (replied the nephew.)—'All lost! The wealth all lost! O my brother! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother! Since the destruction of Jerusalem there fell not such a misfortune on our tribe! The wealth all lost! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother!'—'Alas, my father! I faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; I have not eaten bread this day; let us retire

Digitized by Google

retire into the inner chamber, and when my soul is refreshed with a morsel of bread, and a drop of water, I will put ashes on my head, and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole unhappy story to thee.'

The repast was literally what he had asked; and as soon as it was ended, and the young Aminadab and his uncle seated on the floor together, in the posture of mourning, the former proceeded thus?

'By the letters which my father wrote to thee from England, in the sacred cypher of our family, thou wer't informed of his intended return into his native land of Africa, and invited to meet him at Tetuan, and share his fortune. This he told me while we were upon our voyage; but thy better angel prevented thee, and saved thee the labour and loss of such a journey in vain.

'The ship on board which we unfortunately embarked, was a Dutchman, bound for the coast of Italy, but was to land us at Gibraltar, from whence we knew we could get an immediate passage over. But behold, when we were just in view of the port, when the sight of his native land made the very soul of my father rejoice, and we thought of nothing but safety and content, a Sallee rover gave chase to our ship. The Dutch captain immediately crowded all the sail he could to escape; but the wind dying away, and the pirate gaining upon us with his oars, he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and told him that we were all ruined, for he had neglected to bring a pass.

'This news was like a clap of thunder to my father, who too well knew the consequence of their finding such a mass of wealth in his possession!' 'Wretch that I am, (exclaimed he) why did I venture with one of thy

Digitized by Google

thy ſordid nation? ſlaves to MAMMON, who would hazard liberty and fortune to ſave ſuch a trifle.' 'Then turning about, and going into his cabin, he ſtood ſome moments as if loſt in thought, when burſting into an ecſtatic rage, he ſnatched up the coffer in which his gold and jewels were, from under the head of his bed, and embracing it eagerly; I have gained thee, (ſaid he) I have earned thee with anxiety and toil: and I will not loſe thee now!---O Jonas ſend thy whale to receive me, and bear me to the land of my fathers; I will not be a laughing-ſtock to the Gentiles, nor a bye-word in my father's houſe.'---'Saying which words he ruſhed upon the deck, and before any perſon could poſſibly prevent him, he plunged into the ſea, with the coffer in his arms, and was never ſeen more.

'While all ſtood amazed at his raſhneſs, the heavens, as if appeaſed with this ſacrifice, immediately ſent a wind that filled our fluttering ſails, and ſo bore the ſhip, delivered thus of its Jonas, out of the reach of the enemies. You may better conceive than I can deſcribe the ſituation I was in at this event: I proſtrated myſelf on the ſhore when we landed at Gibraltar, and bewailed my misfortune with tears and lamentations. But this afforded no relief to my diſtreſs; and ſomething I muſt do to earn a morſel of bread. I therefore ſold all my ſuperfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our money was in the coffer; and with theſe did I purchaſe ſome eggs and fruit, which I ſold again in the garriſon, to ſupport my life, till I ſhould have an opportunity of coming to thee, my father, for advice and aſſiſtance in this diſtreſs; and now behold theſe four ducats are become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is all my worldly wealth.'

Digitized by Google

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained silent some time. At length he spoke to his nephew in these words 'It is in vain, O son of my brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied; holy David wept no longer for his child after he was dead, let us therefore arise and think of something that may, if not retrieve the mighty loss, at least administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the weight, without effacing the image, on the golden coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of thy father, who began the world as poor as thou art now; till his unwearied industry in this practice raised him from want. Follow thou therefore his example; and may the God of thy fathers give thee the same success, but with an happier blessing than he found.

'And lo! fortunately it has happened, that I have this very hour received a large quantity of the coin of Britain, all new from the mint. On that therefore thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be thine: I was just going to have sent for another who always works for me, for a fifth; but I am willing to give thee a profit extraordinary to encourage thee.

'Thine earnings in this business will soon produce thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest go privately to London, and purchase old cloaths, which will bring great profit in Germany, as soon as this war shall be at an end.

'Till thou art able to provide for thyself thou mayest eat bread here, and sleep under the shadow of my roof: be not dejected: honest industry never fails of success.'

The young Aminadab was no sooner introduced thus into

Digitized by Google

into a way of honeſt induſtry, than he ſeemed to forget his loſs, and ſettled himſelf moſt intently to work. I fell one of the firſt ſacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; ſo that from a thouſand of us, who were in the bag, his ſhare of the ſpoil was a treaſure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, ſtocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets which could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of impoſition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleaſure; but alas, vain boaſt! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial with all the marks of age and infirmity ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myſelf and my companions to a number of Britiſh ſoldiers, juſt come from Soup Maigre, and ſtraw, in a French priſon.——In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be ſent to England, againſt whom this trade was moſtly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the diſgrace of ſuch diminiſhing. But before I could be ſent off, an accident happened in the family of my maſter, the banker, which gave me a longer ſtay in Liſbon.

I have told you, that in ſecret he was a Jew, though the proſpect of gain made him profeſs Chriſtianity, in deſpight of the horrors of the inquiſition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made ſuch profeſſion, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no ſooner had his gains in his art of diminiſhing, reſtored him a little to his ſpirits, than thinking

Digitized by Google

his portion of that profit too little, and insufficient beside, to raise him to opulence so suddenly as he desired, he cast about how to acquire the whole, or at least a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandise did not interrupt him in his main business, at some distance from his uncle's house; and having conveyed a large sum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the holy office of his uncle's Judaism, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that when he should be seized, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands; as he knew it was impossible he should ever escape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in comparison of the sums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted himself with the thought, that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and justly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the inquisition took possession of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in his hands, they went directly in quest of it, and that so unexpectedly, that they caught him at his work, beyond a possibility of evasion or escape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any state. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not less cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquisition.

Of all the human sufferings I yet had seen, except in the case of the sacrificers, this gave me the greatest pleasure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here

Digitized by Google

I here changed my service of course, and entered into that of the holy office, to the judge of which I was delivered, the day I was taken out of the possession of the unfortunate Jew.——I have before given you my sentiments, on the absurdity of thinking to please the Deity by cruelty to his creatures, in the instance of the human passover of the Jews. The same arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if possible, more absurd under the christian dispensation than any other, as beside the general laws of nature and reason, the particular laws of christianity do every where clearly and expressly command brotherly love, tenderness, and compassion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty, under the severest denunciations of wrath.

But there has been so much, and that so well said on this subject already; and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches, who are brought before this tribunal, are so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON *and* ILLISSA.

THE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of the most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He

Digitized by Google

He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the Portugueze, by an uncommon turn of feature, which shewed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus; 'Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confess thy guilt.'—'I told thee before, O judge of the faith of Christians, (replied the prisoner, with a composed look and determined voice) I told thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am not conscious of any thing that should incur the censure of this tribunal: nor shall all the tortures, which the inventive cruelty of man can inflict upon this wretched body, make me lie against mine immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt to which I am a stranger. But tell me of what I am accused, and my conscience shall direct my lips to answer thee the truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have erred; thou knowest that I have not always professed the Christian faith, according to the laws established here: pardon then the errors of mine ignorance, and instruct me to avoid the like for the future. And, O! I adjure thee by thy Christian faith, to relieve my heart from the anxiety that tears it for the fate of my daughter! O, let me know'——

His aduration was broken off at these words by the officers of the court; and his answer not being satisfactory, he was remanded back to prison, without any farther questions, with the strongest menaces of severity; though in secret the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderness and respect, and supplied with every comfort

Digitized by Google

comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrors of a prison.

My master then withdrew, and changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and splendid dress, retired to his own apartments, where, after the respectful ceremony of sending to desire admission, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderness of love; 'I have seen thy father, my dearest Illissa, (said he) and he is well; nor shall any human means be wanting to preserve him so.'

'Why then may I not see him? (replied the lady) how can I trust thy words, thou hast already deceived me?'—'Thou knowest my love, (returned he) that thy request is impossible; and if I have deceived thee; by promising compliance with it, it was only to calm the transports of thy passion, that in a cooler moment thou mightest hearken to the voice of love and happiness.'—Mention not happiness to me in this place! Can happiness be without liberty? Is a prison the proper scene for love? But I will be deceived no longer! I will see my father, or I will not live. Grant me this request, and then expect my gratitude. Thou knowest that for myself I fear not thy power! thou knowest that immediate death is ever in my reach; trifle not therefore with me any longer; restore me to my father; restore us both to liberty! and then, then only, speak to me of love.'—'Thou hast conquered, my Illissa! thou hast conquered! Your father shall be restored to you; and we will all fly together to thy native land, where we shall live in happiness; but this cannot be compassed on a sudden; it will require both time and address to secure our retreat. But when I have

Digitized by Google

have done this for my Illiſſa, can I be ſure of her love? Will her heart return the ſacrifice I make?'——I have told thee that my heart is grateful; I tell thee now it is not inſenſible to ſofter paſſions; urge me no further: when I am freed from this priſon, and my father is preſent to give the ſanction of his authority to my actions, I promiſe thee to become thy wife. And my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promiſe at the altar.

Theſe words raiſed my maſter's heart into an extaſy; he proſtrated himſelf at her feet, he kiſſed her hand, and ſwore eternal love.

The reſt of the day was ſpent in forming ſchemes for their eſcape, and planning ſcenes of future happineſs; in the proſpect of which their unequal years ſeemed to raiſe no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen: her beauty though very great, was rather majeſtic than ſoft; different from the Bohemian lady I mentioned before; an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an awful diſtance, and the flaſh of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was juſt paſt his meridian, but ſtill in all the vigour of his life, and far from diſagreeable in his appearance or converſation.

There was ſomething ſo extraordinary in this affair, that it raiſed my ſtrongeſt curioſity to know the circumſtances of it; nor was I long at a loſs. In the happineſs of his heart, that evening my maſter preſented a jewel of immenſe value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he aſked a tablet caſed with gold as a return.

The lady refuſed not his requeſt, but at giving it, deſired

Digitized by Google

fired he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the spirit of the golden case. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and summoning, by our sympathetic impulse, the spirit I wanted, I shewed him my curiosity, which he complied with, by a look which signified these words——'There is something so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons who have raised your curiosity, that it will be necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you the satisfaction you desire.'

'The father of the young lady, who gave me to our master, is the person whom you saw this morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, was Pheron; he is a native of Abyssinia, where his ancestors have possessed ample territories for many ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

'From the first dawn of reason to the mind of Pheron, he shewed the strongest desire for knowledge, and the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances of human knowledge have not been so great in those countries as here: yet natural reason has been able to discover the sublime truths of morality; the practice of which is called wisdom, and the time consumed here in fruitless speculation devoted to it; by which means, if men are not so knowing, they are certainly more wise.—In this happy employment passed the first years of the youth of Pheron, till riper manhood calling him to the service of his country, he went at the head of his father's

Digitized by Google

father's vassals, to repel the invasions of the Ethiopians.

'His success was so great in this first essay of his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but also carried the war into their own country, where, after many victories, he compelled them to sue for peace.

'The fame of his actions soon reached the ears of his sovereign, who sent for him to his court, and rewarded his services by giving him his sister in marriage. Dignities in those countries are not prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness. Pheron returned home with his bride, to govern and protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued their usual occupations; war not being made there a constant profession, nor the gratification of the worst passions of human nature reduced into a science, and practised by rule.

'The peace which Pheron had made was not injurious to his enemies, and therefore was preserved by them, which gave him leisure to attend to the improvement of his country, and instruction of his people.

'He had lived in this happy state some years, when there arrived a person in his country, who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of those nations is such, that the inhabitants themselves rarely ever travel; nor is the face of a stranger seen in an age among them. This made the arrival of this man the more taken notice of; he was immediately introduced to Pheron, to whose friendship his knowledge in several branches of science soon recommended him.

'When the stranger had thus established an interest with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive of his coming into a country so remote from his own; he told him, that he had undertaken this hazardous

Digitized by Google

and painful journey in pure obedience to the divine command, of inſtructing the ignorant in the knowledge of ſalvation. He explained to him the myſteries of the Chriſtian religion; the hierarchy of Rome; the divine foundation of its power; and the ſeveral orders in its government, in ſo forcible a manner, that he ſoon made a convert of him.

'Pheron had always adored the name of Chriſt, but never till now knew what it was to be a Chriſtian. One only book of his goſpel had he ever ſeen, and from that he could underſtand no more, than that faith in the death of Chriſt for the redemption of mankind, and obedience to the ſelf evident laws of morality, with the pious worſhip of the one GOD alone, was the whole religion taught by him.——It is not ſtrange therefore, if the glorious fabric of the church, as repreſented by this Jeſuit, for ſuch he was, had all the effect he could deſire upon him, the naturally inquiſitive turn of his mind making him liſten with eagerneſs to every thing which ſeemed to open a new proſpect to it.——Nor was he content with his own knowing thoſe ſublime doctrines: he alſo inſtructed his wife, whom he tenderly loved, and their example converted the greateſt part of his people; for nothing could prevail upon him to attempt forcing their aſſent.——But this did not ſatisfy him; the deſcriptions which he had heard of the learning, piety, and glory of Rome, had filled his ſoul with an ardent deſire to ſee that metropolis of the world, that he might learn its virtues, and tranſplant them into his own country. He communicated this thought to his inſtructor, who, fired with the glory of ſuch a proſelyte, encouraged him in it by every argument he could uſe.——This determined his reſolution to make an attempt, the hazards of which would be rewarded with ſuch

happy consequences. He therefore prepared all things for his journey, in which his wife would bear him company, and also bring her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his Holiness; and committing the government of his people to his brother, and taking jewels and gold to an immense value, to defray the expences of his journey, he set out with a company sufficient to protect him from the dangers of travelling through such inhospitable countries, and arrived without any accident at the Red Sea, where he embarked on board a ship for Alexandria.

'While he waited here for a ship bound to Italy, the plague deprived him of his instructor and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for his loss; but virtue soon awoke reason to his guard; and his care for his daughter made him careful for himself.—His attendants would have persuaded him to return directly home, as he had lost his guide; but the loss of his wife made the thought of home a torture to him. He therefore sent them back, and resolved to settle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the monastic life himself at Rome.

'With this design he embarked in the first ship that sailed for Europe, not being able to bear the sight of a place which had been so fatal to him. The ship was bound to this place, but for a large sum of money the commander engaged to land him at Leghorn; but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth on his passage, he brought him directly hither, where he was no sooner landed, than he informed the inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately seized both Pheron and his daughter, for errors in their opinions, and confined them in the prisons of the holy office, where they have now been above a year.

Digitized by Google

'The

'The first motive of this outrage was the stranger's wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court; and which would soon have brought them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and by what you have overheard to-day, may probably prevent it entirely.

CHAP. XXII.

The love adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, *and obtains his consent. He employs an* ENGLISH *sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.*

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of Illissa.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superior to such terrors.

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of Pheron; and in the illusions of imagination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! my conscience is secure, and I despise your tortures.'—'As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him in his surprise, to be continued, and he proceeded thus;—'I have told thee, that thy tortures should not bend my soul to falsehood; and now thou shalt find it so.'

'O father of Illissa, (returned my master, melted into tenderness at such a sight) I come not to give thee

Digitized by Google torture!

torture! I bring the balm of comfort to thy soul!'—'Art not thou the inquisitor?'—'I am, O Pheron, and thy friend;'—'Am I awake? is this, or was the former but a dream? Guard me, good heaven! let me not fall from virtue!'—'Such virtue ever is the care of heaven! Pheron, behold thy friend! the proselyte of thy virtues—The time admits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods for our obtaining happiness. Thy Illissa'—'Heaven guard my child!'—'Thy Illissa is well, and happy in her father's welfare!'—'O my child! my child! but shall I ever see her again?'—'You shall, she shall be restored to your bosom, and never turn from it more.'—'Good, gracious Judge! O, when? O, how?—my child! my child!'—'Suppress your joy a moment; the beauties of Illissa have triumphed over the malice of her fate! she has found a lover, who offers happiness to her and you.'—'Does my child love him? Is he an honest man?'—'His life will prove him such! he offers to restore you and your Illissa to liberty, and to accompany you both to your native country, for there can be no safety in Europe for you after you leave this place; your escape from whence, and every circumstance relating to your return, shall be his care. Nor will he demand the reward his heart pants for, till your safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his sincerity.'

'O name the generous man!'—'Behold him at your feet! receive me for your son.'—'Thee! the inquisitor! who threatened me with torture!'—'But treated thee with tenderness, treated Illissa with respect.'—'Make me know that!'—'I ask no favour but on that condition; if I procure liberty for you and your Illissa; if I restore you to your native land, and accompany you thither;

Digitized by Google

thither; if your Illiſſa acknowledges the ſervices of my love, and aſks your conſent to reward them, will you confirm my bliſs, and own me for your ſon?'—'I will, and thank kind heaven that gives me ſuch a ſon.'

Saying this, he embraced my maſter, who in a few words let him know the ſcheme he had formed for their eſcape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to proſecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquiſition, there was confined an Engliſh ſeaman, who had been ſeized, and ſecretly conveyed thither, for ſome diſreſpectful expreſſions againſt the Divinity of St Dominick.

The manly, modeſt reſolution with which he had refuſed to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmneſs under the firſt tortures, marked him out to the inquiſitor as the perſon proper for his deſign; for he would not truſt any one of his own country, not even his brother, whoſe treachery to Pheron he now abhorred.

As ſoon as he opened the door of his cell, the ſailor, whoſe ſoreneſs prevented his ſleeping very ſound, perceived him, and imagining it was a ſummons to a repetition of the torture, he ſprung up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, 'Hollo! who comes there?'——'The inquiſitor advancing, anſwered, A friend.'—'Aye! damn all ſuch friends, (replied the ſailor) I ſuppoſe you are come to give me another toaſting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd ſend you off with a ſalt eel for your ſupper.'

'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to ſet you free if you deſire, and will deſerve it.'—'Avaſt haling, brother! I do not underſtand you!' 'Why, do not you deſire to be free?'—'Deſire! aye, that I do! but I may whiſtle for that wind long enough

before it will blow.'—'Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you imagine! what would you do to be free?'—'Do? I'd burn the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor's throat! I'd do any thing but turn papist, or fight against Old England.'—'Honest Briton! But suppose I should set you free; would you serve me faithfully in one thing that is neither against your country nor your religion?'—'Belay that, and I'll warrant you if I say it, I'll do it without more words. I'm no landsman nor Portuguese.'—'Well then, I'll take your word, and so come with me.'—The sailor was so surprised, he scarce knew whether he was asleep or awake; however, as soon as the inquisitor had unlocked his chains, he shrugged his shoulders, and followed him without more questions.

When they were come into my master's apartment, he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some wine to cheer his spirits, 'You are now at liberty, my friend (said he) without any farther condition, and may go where you please: but if you will serve me in an affair I shall mention to you, you shall have reason to think of this night with pleasure as long as you live.'—'Serve you, master! (replied the sailor) that I will! name but what you would have me do; that is, as I said before; you understand me; and I'll do it; though it was to hand the main top-gallant sail in a storm at mid-night, when the yard was broke in the slings, and it was not my watch; for if it was a man's watch do you see, it would be but his duty, and there is no merit in a man's doing his duty; I am no fincher, I never say aye when I mean no: though I say it, I am a gentleman; my father was lieutenant of a man of war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty years,

Digitized by Google man

man and boy, and never was once brought to the gangway in all that time. If the noble captain that rated me a midshipman twenty years ago, had lived to be an admiral, I should have been an officer before now.'

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character, made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to London, buy a good ship, and freight her for Alexandria, and to call at Lisbon in his way, and take my master and his friends on board; to do which, he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in London, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when on a sudden thought he turned short on the inquisitor; 'Steady, (said he) steady; so far we go right before the wind; and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? if it is the Pretender, or the French king, here take back your trinkams; I'll be damned before I'll help either of them to make his escape.'—'Never fear my friend, (replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter, at the strangeness of such a thought) I promise you it is neither of these; I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.'—'But shall we not have one dash at this damned place? (added the sailor) shall we not set it on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat? I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulph of hell, to have a stroke at the Devil Dominick; shall we not set the inquisition on

Digitized by Google

fire,

fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat?'—'We will consider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you not to be seen in Lisbon at present; and to be as expeditious as possible in your return?'—'Never fear, master; never fear,' replied the sailor; and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.'

I here quitted the service of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.

CHAP. XXII.

The sailor goes to London, *buys a ship and returns to* Lisbon, *where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* French *ship. He lands his passengers at* Alexandria, *returns home and marries.* Chrysal *quits his service.*

My new master no sooner found himself at liberty, than he hasted away to the sea-side, without ever stopping to look behind him, and luckily finding the packet just ready to sail, he was out of sight of Lisbon before morning.

Never was an heart so intent upon executing a commission faithfully as his; he thought of nothing else all the passage, and the moment he arrived in London he sold the jewels, bought a ship, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, set sail for Lisbon, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in London.

I had been an idle spectator of these transactions, for young Aminadab had made such depradations on me, that no one in London would accept me at my original value; and my master's honour would not think

think of parting with me for less, without acquainting the person from whom he had received me.—The moment he arrived in Lisbon he gave notice to his friend, whose joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expressed. He immediately had the treasures, which he designed to take with him, conveyed secretly abroad, and as soon as the wind served, embarked himself with his friends in the night, and obliged my master to sail directly, though greatly to his dissatisfaction, because he would not consent to his firing the prison of the inquisition, and cutting the inquisitor's throat.

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, sending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impossible to conceive an happier company that were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of their voyage, which met but one cloud that seemed at first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called owner, 'Well owner, you shall now see what English boys can do: there is a large Frenchman bearing down upon us, but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along side of us; and as I expected some such thing, I took out a letter of marque, so that you need not fear being hanged for a pirate, if the worst should happen.

But delighted as my master was, his passengers did

Digitized by Google

not

not seem so well pleased with the news, especially his owner, who was not used to fighting, and besides was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure, which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming toward them, the inquisitor went into the cabin that he should not be observed by the men, and sending for my master, accosted him thus: 'Surely, my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that ship, (for we were lying to) She certainly means to attack you.'—'And so let her, owner, (replied my master) I'll warrant she gets as good as she brings.'—'But consider, my friend, (returned the inquisitor) consider we are on board you.'—'Well sir, and what then; you are not afraid: the lady is safe stowed safe below! and you'll stand as good a chance as another; you are not afraid.'—'My good friend, I have not time to explain my reasons to you; but if you have any regard for me, you will instantly crowd all the sail you can, and get clear of this affair; I desire it; I beg it.'—'Why look you, owner, what needs all these words; if so be you order us, we must put about to be sure, for the ship is yours; but then the honour of old England, consider that; the honour of Old England.'—'O my friend, I can consider nothing but my desire to avoid this danger; so once more I beg'—'Enough said, enough said.' Then going upon the deck, 'Well, my lads, our owner does not chuse it is brush, while the lady is on board; so we must about ship: but as we come back, Soup Maigre shall pay for it.'—And saying this, he obeyed the desire of his owner as faithfully as if it had been his own, only not with the same appearance of pleasure, not being able

Digitized by Google

able to avoid ejaculating damn fear, at every turn of the tune he whistled as he walked the deck the rest of that day.

He had so punctually observed his owner's instructions in getting a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the Frenchman; nor did we meet with any thing disagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good humour, my master addressed his owner thus——'Now owner, while the sky is clear, and we have nothing else to do, I had better give you an account of your money. Here is the log-book, which you may over-haul at your leisure, though the sooner the better. This is the time; there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as may happen by and by; you'll find all as fair as a new cable: but I must give you one point to direct your reckoning by, and that is this; you bade me buy a ship, and freight her, and so forth, and she and the cargo should be my own, after I have done your job this trip. Now owner, it is very true, that a less vessel than this might have made the run; but then you seemed so desirous to be safe, that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever turned to windward, and able to go hank for hank, with any thing that swims the sea, as we shewed when we run the Frenchman out of sight yesterday; though it went against my heart to do it; but no matter for that now; the ship is yours, and you have a right to be obeyed. However, there is the account, and here is the rest of your money, of which I did not lay out one shilling that I could avoid, but one guinea, which I gave to my old mess-mate Will Crofstree, whom I met on Tower-hill in distress; and one I gave Black Moll

Digitized by Google

of Wapping to heave down; and I could not well avoid those either, for Will was an old mess-mate, and I owed Moll for many a good turn in her way; but all this signifies nothing to you; they can be stopped on account; and here is a damn'd guinea too, that would not go; I believe it has been in the hospital, till it was fluxed off its legs.

'And now owner, as you may thing this ship cost too much, and that the cargo is too good, I will not keep you to your bargain; she is your own and all that is in her, only pay the men; as for me, I am satisfied with having got out of that damn'd inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself. If you think that I have deserved any thing, well and good; if not, I do not fear bread, while the sea flows round Old England: all that grieves me is that you would not let us set fire to the inquisition, and cut the inquisitor's throat.'—If my master's bluntness in the affair of the French ship gave offence to his owner, the honesty of this speech restored him to his warmest esteem: and made Pheron, who was present, cry out in rapture, 'Thank heaven, there is still some honesty among mankind.'—'Honesty! aye, (replied my master) a little among the tars of Old England! a little.'

The inquisitor having by this time recovered from the astonishment, into which such nobleness of soul threw him, returned the account unopened, with these words; 'I am convinced your account must be just: and I freely make you a gift, not of this ship and cargo, for they are justly your own already, but of the rest of the money which is in your hands.'—'What all owner! all!'—'All, my friend; if it were as many times so much, you justly merit it.'—'But then owner, had not you better sign the account if you please, for fear

of after reckonings with your executors; for I hate the law damnably, ever since I lost a year's pay for hindering our boatswain's mate's brother to beat his wife. The brimstone swore I beat her husband, and so I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault that set her on. Damn all lawyers, say I.'—'Well, then, my honest worthy friend, there is a receipt; and I wish you success equal to your merit; and you cannot have more.'—'Enough said, owner; enough said; I thank you; I thank you.'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at Alexandria, from whence they soon set out for Pheron's country; and at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which he assured them were not better than bumboats, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a Thames waterman.

Having finished this, his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at Gosport, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to speak so till now, readily consented to marry him. One thing though I must not omit, and that was, that he kept a constant look out all the voyage home, for that Frenchman whom he had fled from so sore against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush for the honour of Old England.

I did not remain with him to be a witness of his happiness; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine sleeve buttons, to present to his mistress the morning before his marriage.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL arrives in LONDON, where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.

THE diminution of my ſize, which had made my late maſter careleſs about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent ſcruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my preſent value, for me.

I did not remain long in his poſſeſſion: he paſſed me off as ſoon as he arrived in London, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker at a diviſion of the loſs, in the purchaſe of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad.—Strange were the ſcenes, and unexpected the faces, which I ſaw in this place, where every neceſſary utenſil of life, every ornament of luxury, was depoſited, as in a place of ſecurity, by their reſpective owners: but your own experience makes any particular deſcription of this place, or its manifold myſterious trade, unneceſſary to you.

The misfortune of my ſize kept me priſoner here till Saturday night, when my maſter always puts off his light coin, juſt before he ſhuts his ſhop, to the poor people, whoſe neceſſity requiring an immediate ſupply for the ſupport of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and ſo muſt even bear the loſs.——Such a perſon did he think you, and accordingly gave me to you; but the moment I came into your poſſeſſion, and found that you were the choſen of ten thouſand, the firſt-born of ſcience, whom wiſdom had inſtructed, and art led

Digitized by Google

by

by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature; till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your purſuit, had been obliged to conſent to a revelation of her moſt occult wiſdom, and to entruſt you with the command of that chain, which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I ſay, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the intelligence appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greateſt pleaſure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I ſhould confer this completion of human happineſs and honour upon you; a pleaſure that was heightened by the noble conſtancy you ſhewed, when the ſmell of the hot ox cheek, as you came by the cook's-ſhop, raiſed that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you ſhould purchaſe ſome of it to ſatisfy your hunger, or preſerve me for this laſt experiment, in which the latter was ſo glorioufly triumphant.

The auſpicious moment is arrived; nature labours in the throws of the myſtic birth; and lo! the philoſophic king ariſes in all the glory of the morning! attend to my words; receive the conſummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this ſecret cauſe you muſt know

* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *

O doleful and deplorable event; never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears. Juſt as the ſpirit had arrived at this moſt intereſting point, human weakneſs, unable to ſuppreſs the impulſe of inter-

Digitized by Google

ral vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox cheek set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam. The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor *, where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burden under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the one moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness; such is the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether thou art a taylor, whose principal debtor is made a lord; a physician, whose nostrum is discovered; a cobler, who sleepest over thy last, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treasure; a poet, whose play is refused; or a senator, who hast mortgaged thine estate to purchase a seat in parliament, just before its dissolution, attend to the instruction in my words, and learn wisdom from my example. Seize the present moment, nor depend upon the future, let reason curb expectation; reduce imagination to common sense; and bring your wishes within the bound of your real wants, so shall industry banish necessity from your habitation, and content turn all your possessions into gold.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

* See the Preface.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google